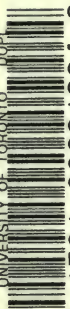


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO DUPL



3 1761 00361294 2

UNIV. OF
TORONTO
LIBRARY



461

The English Conquest of Ireland.

Oxford

HORACE HART, PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

Original Series.

107



111

The English Conquest of Ireland.

A. D. 1166-1185.

MAINLY FROM THE 'EXPUGNATIO HIBERNICA'
OF GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS.

A Parallel Text

FROM

1. MS. Trinity College, Dublin, E. 2. 31, about 1425 A. D.
2. MS. Rawlinson, B. 490, Bodleian Library, about 1440 A. D.

PART I. THE TEXT.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL, M.A.,

TRINITY HALL, CAMBRIDGE, HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.

131839
9/5/14

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,
BY KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LIMITED
PATERNOSTER HOUSE, CHARING CROSS ROAD, W.C.

M DCCC XCVI.

PR
1119
AZ
no 107

DEDICATED TO THE

RT. HON. WILLIAM EWART GLADSTONE, M.P.

AND ALL WHO HAVE WORKT FOR

Justice to Ireland

See opposite. Mr. Thomas Austin sends me some more forms worth notice in the Dublin MS. :—bethweñ, between, 10/12 ; bolthenys, boldness, 75/15 ; ather, either, 100/3 ; ayse, ease, 148/1 ; behoud (? th), behoof, benefit, 112/30 ; culuertnesse, falseness, 126/31 ; cytteyns, citizens, 122/27 ; durr, door, 42/22 ; ense, ends, 80/29 ; fale (fele), many, 74/10 ; fobler, feebler, 68/6 ; forume, form, 39/12 ; ? heuedes (as in note), 14/17 ; hym þriddesum, Greek αὐτος *tipros*, 14/1, 32/20 ; I-shwerne, sworn, 24/26 ; mich yuell, leprosy (comp. great pox), 32/7 ; neyght, nigh, 74/16 ; pynsyng (pinching), affliction, 88/6 ; rechest, reckest, 108/9 ; ruthlyng, ? rattling, 16/13 ; schavng, change, 51/6 ; senne, synod, 120/15 ; senthe (? seūthe), seventh, 58/30 ; senfte, 59/30 ; soine, soon, 60/11 ; soldrys, shoulders, 89/11 ; sortely, shortly, 149/22 ; shechyng, seeking, 147/19.

FOREWORDS.

THE first manuscript of this interesting story of "oure knyghten gestes yn Irlande" (92/15), and of Henry II's Conquest of our sister Isle, was sent over to me from the Library of Trinity College, Dublin, by Dr. John K. Ingram, to be copied, printed, and edited by him for the Early English Text Society. He hoped to do his work at it during his July-September holiday (1893) in Scotland, on Loch Lomond, I having read his proofs with the MS. for him. But illness prevented him; and so I (as the Society's man-of-all-work) had to take the book up. Both the story told—mainly, though freely, from the *Expugnacio Hibernica* of Giraldus Cambrensis,—and the forms of the words, interested me. For the copier of the englisht text has often slipt into his own Irish dialect, specially in the use of *d* and *t* for *th*, and has written *dyng*¹ and *tyng*² for *thing*; *drogh*³ and *trog*⁴ for *through*; *day* for *they*⁵; *idrow* (18/1) for *thrown*; *tanked* for *thanked* (14/19); *tynke* for *think* (6/26); *toght* for *thought* (16/25, 18/7); *tough* (as once in *The Three King's Sons*) for *though* (22/14); &c. At the same time he has used *th* for *t* and *d*: *thedyng* (10/7) and *tythyng* (6/15) for *tidings*; *onther* (6/31) for *under*; *reut* (8/1) for *ruth*; *bethwen* (10/12) for *between*; *thwey* (12/35) for *two*; *herth* (2/8, 13, 22/28) for *heart*; *ibansheth* (24/1) for *banisht*; *Iendeth* (22/16) for *ended*; *smyth* (24/12) for *smite*, &c. The copier has other peculiarities, both in the use of other consonants and vowels⁶, which the reader will note as he goes along, and which will be collected for him in the Introduction by Dr. Douglas Bruce, of the Ladies College at Bryn Mawr, Philadelphia, that will form

¹ 88/27; 134/13. ² 24/14; 28/8; (no)tyng 8/12; 16/5; 20/9; &c.

³ 14/8.

⁴ 22/6, 7; 26/1, &c.

⁵ 10/19; 12/21; 24/10, 11.

⁶ *Both har'* 128/20 doesn't at first look like *But ere*: still, you soon get accus-tomd to the scribe's little weaknesses. *Harym*, harm, is in the Rawlinson MS. 143/12: cp. *sarrif* serve, in Misyn. E. E. T. Soc. The Southern infinitive in *-y* or *-ye* occurs in both MSS. 58/27, &c. For other odd spellings, see opposite.

Part II. of this book, when complete, and will no doubt be finished in 1894, or '95.

As it was now and then hard to understand the Dublin text, and one nearer the standard tongue turned up in the Rawlinson MS. B. 490—the MS. that contains one of Mr. Steele's text of the prose *Secreta*—I got Mrs. Parker to copy this Bodleian MS.¹, and the Clarendon Press to set it opposite the Dublin one. The comparison of the two versions is full of interesting points, as the Rawlinson is generally less archaic than the Dublin², while each helps to fill up the other's occasional leavings-out. There is at least one other MS. of the *Conquest*, the later one in Trinity College, Dublin, F. 4. 4, which is said to be a 16th century transcript of E. 2. 31. From it, an extract is given below, pp. xiv-xvi as a specimen. Doubtless, other MSS. of the text exist elsewhere. Luckily for us, the late Rev. Jas. F. Dimock re-edited the *Expugnatio Hibernica* in vol. v. (1867) *Giraldi Cambrensis Opera* in the Rolls Series of *Chronicles and Memorials*; and his notes, dates, and Preface have been of the greatest use to me. He says (p. xxix) that there are two editions, and perhaps a third, of the *Expugnacio*: (1) that in an early 13th century MS. at Lambeth, No. 371, "probably penned during Giraldus's lifetime" (p. xxxi), and in (R.) and (B.), MSS. Bibl. Reg. 13 B. viii in the British Museum, and Rawlinson B. 188 in the Bodleian. In treating the two latter MSS. as of the first cast of the work, Mr. Dimock neglects the marginal additions of the Royal MS. These additions make (2) the second version of the *Expugnacio* (pp. xxxii, xxxiv), shown in (R.), and MS. Ff. 1. 27, in the University Library, Cambridge, in which "there is one whole chapter, (also in our English, p. 38-40 below) the eighteenth of the first book—giving the account of the synod at Armagh in 1170, of which no other mention is known besides this,

¹ Mr. George Parker has collated the proofs with the MS. Mr. Thomas Austin has made the Glossary and Indexes to both Texts. Dr. Ingram wrote the English side-notes to the even pages 10-32, tho I've altered 2 or 3 of em.

² I suppose the first englishing now represented by the Dublin MS. was made in the 14th century.

in this chapter of Giraldus—which is not in Lambeth 371, but is in Bibl. Reg. 13 B. viii and Rawlinson B. 188.”

We now come to the MS. of most interest to us, Harleian 177, for in it only (as I gather from Mr. Dimock’s note 3, p. 236) is the original of one of our English bits on pp. 16, 18 below:—

Trin. Coll. Dublin, E. 2. 31.

A wonder was of that fantasye: A-morowe, whan it was day, the place ther this folk iseye smyten vpon ham, the wedes and the grase that stoden al euen vpright, thay lay alle idrow adoune, and icast to grond.

Harl. 117, lf. 14, bk. 15.

Mirum autem fantasmate tali, quod in crastino die clarescente, in loco ubi uidebatur exercitus ille in ipsos irruisse, herbe & vrtice, que prius alte fuerant, & erecte, solotenus prostrate iacebant, & complanate.

For this, the other MSS., R. and B., have “primus hic miles, qui in hac insula niso mansueto et domesticato Nisi filiam infestavit.”

On this Harleian 177, Mr. Dimock says, at p. xxxv of his Preface:

(it) “furnishes a copy of the *Expugnatio* which, so far as it goes,—it has many and large omissions—generally agrees closely with the text of this second edition. . . . The omissions are more especially of the extraneous matter, not relating to Ireland; but there is much curtailing also of Irish matter, when not directly historical. In the descriptions of the heroes, for instance, much often is left out; and in the orations which Giraldus puts into their mouths, still more. The compiler of it never condenses, but simply omits. In an oration . . . he will retain two or three sentences of the beginning, and two or three more of the end, with perhaps another or two out of the middle, if not very much less than all this, word for word as in the complete oration, without much care about connection or sense . . . it certainly is only an abbreviation, such as I describe it.”

This is just the case with our English text¹, though here and there it has bits not in Harl. 177. As to that MS., Mr. Dimock continues, pp. xxxv-vi:

“It generally agrees closely, as I have said, with the second

¹ It stops at chapter 34 of Book II (75 of our pages go to 171 of the Rolls *Giraldus*).

edition, as in (R.) and (F.); but it exhibits a somewhat more advanced text. For instance, the word *Stadia* of (L)ambeth MS. occurs only twice instead of four times, out of eight as in (R)awlinson MS.: and instead of *Arcarii* always, as in the early manuscripts, it has the *Satellites equestres* of the later ones, in about half the instances where the words occur. And, moreover, in a few instances, it has a word or two that are not in the early manuscripts, but are in the later ones.

This manuscript has no note whatever as to its history; but it, or its original perhaps, would seem to have been written by one of the English settlers in Ireland, as it attempts occasionally, instead of Giraldus's Latin of all the other manuscripts, to give an English rendering of the Irish names. Thus, instead of *Murchardi filius*, or *Dermitius*, or *Murchardides*, it has 'Macmorhith' or 'Macmorhith'; instead of *Ororicus*, 'Oroch.' In one instance the writer appears to make a blunder in his Englishing: he renders *Otuethelis* 'Oneyl' instead of O'Toole. . . . It is not the work of a very correct scribe."

As a sample of the cutting-down, by Harl. 177, of Giraldus's descriptions of men, take the most trenchant instance, that of Henry II. In the Rolls edition, this description takes nearly six big octavo pages, *Op.* v. 301-6, the whole of Chapter 46, Book I. Leaving out the first page, Harl. 177 and the englisher start with the second, p. 302:

Expugn. Hibern. lib. i. cap. xlvi.

Harl. MS. 177, ff. 44, bk. 45.

Descriptio anglorum regis

Henrici secundi.

Erat igitur anglorum rex, henricus secundus, uir sub-ruffus, cesius; amplo capite & rotundo; oculis glausis; ad iram toruis, & rubore suffusis; facie ignea; uoce quassa; collo ab humeris aliquantulum demisso; pectore quadrato; brachiis ualidis; corpore carnosio; Et nature magis, quam gule

Dubl. MS. E. 2. 31.

Page 88 below.

The kynge henry the otheȝ, was a mañ sauꝛede, roune heed, & round grey egheñ; roghly lokyng, & rede yn wreth; vysage rede bernynge, grete speche, neke somdel logh of þe sholdres, brest thyk, armes

uicio, citra timorem [*read tu-
morem*] enormem & torporem
omnem; moderata quadam im-
moderancia uentre peramplo.
Erat enim cibo potuque mo-
destus ac sobrius, & parsimonie
quo-ad principi licuit, per omnia
datus.

[*Here a page and a quarter
of the full text, Op. v. 302-3, is
left out by Harl. 177, though
our englisher gives a little of it*¹.]

Vrgentibus incomodis, nemo
benignior: resumpta securitate,
nemo rigidior. Acer in [in]-
domitos; clemens in subactos;
Durus in domesticos; diffusus
in extraneos; largus in publico;
parcus in priuato.

¹ Et ut hanc naturae injuriam in-
dustria reprimeret ac mitigaret . . .
immoderata corpus vexatione torque-
bat . . . sibi nec pacem ullam nec
requiem indulgebat. Venationi nam-
que trans modestiam deditus, summo
diluculo equo cursore transvectus,
nunc saltus lustrans, nunc silvas pene-
trans, nunc montium juga transcen-
dens, dies ducebat inquietos: vespere
vero domi receptum, vel ante coenam
vel post, rarissime sedentem con-
spexeris. Post tantas namque fatiga-
tiones, totam statione continua curiam
lassare consueverat.

staluarthc, of fleshy body; &
more of kynde than of glotony,
grete of wombe; for he was, as
to prynce belongeth, [of] mete,
& of drynke ful meen & for-
berynge;

Whan any vnhappes hym be-
felle, noman meker; efte whan
he was yn sekernesse, no man
sterner. Suert ayeyn the bold,
meke wyth ham that wereñ
vnder y-brought, hard amonge
hys owne, & priuely large
amonge vnkouth.

&, for to a-quenche that gretnesse,
he put hymself to ful mych trauaylle,
that wnneth he lete hys body haue
eny reste, ether by day otheṛ by
nyght; ffor, wynter & somer, he
arose euer more yn the dawnyng, &
herd fyrst hys seruyce of holy chyrch;
theṛ-aftyṛ, most what al þe day he
wold ben out, otheṛ wyth houndes
otheṛ wyth hawkes, for yn thay two
thynges he delyted hym swyth mych
wythal; & vnnethe he wold ryde any
amblyng hors, bot myche trottyng
hors, for to trauaylle hys body the
more. Aftyṛ al hys trauaylle a-day,
vnnethe he lete hys body haue a lytell
reste for to syte to hys mete the whyle
that he eete; & anoon aftyr mete, &
namely aftyr sopper, anoon he wold
aryse & stonde, & so dryue forth al þe
meste parte of the nyght, so that al
þe court was oft ennyede theṛ-of.

Quem semel exosum habuerat,
uix in amorem; Quem semel
amauerat, uix in odium reuocabat.

[Two-thirds of a page of the full text is here left out, on Henry's "extreme delight in falconry and hunting; his open violation of his marriage-vow; his untruthfulness; his dilatoriness in matters of justice; his simoniacal practises; his love of peace; his almsgiving, humility, &c."]

Humilitatis amator; nobilitatis oppressor, & superbie calcator.

[Nearly two pages of the full text are here left out, on Henry's "usurpations in things of God; his inattention to divine service; his seizures of the revenues of vacant churches; his treatment of his sons; his wonderful memory," &c., &c.—and Harl. 177 begins again with the final paragraph, of which it gives the first sentence, and the last six words.]

sed haec [h]actenus, nec preter rem tamen, cursim & breuiter hic delibasse sufficiat. [11 words of print left out.] ad nostram de cetero hiberniam reuertamur.

pe man that he ones hated,
vnnethe he wold euer eft loue;
& man that he ones loued,
vnneth he wold euer eft hate.

& openly mekenesse & debouerte he louede; pryde & hauteynesse he hated, & wold brynge vnder fote.

[not english.]

It is not my business to follow up this question of our

englisher's original. Dr. Bruce will, I hope, do that. I note only what I have just seen, that Mr. Dimock printed part of our Dublin MS., E. 2. 31, in five pages (on six) of his vol. v., pp. xciii-xcviii¹, our pp. 2-10, to line 14, 'prince of wales'; and that from this part, he said (p. lxxvii) our MS. "seems rather a paraphrase of such portions of the treatise [*Expugnacio*] as the writer, no doubt an Anglo-Hibernian², deemed most worthy the notice of Anglo-Hibernian readers"; while Prof. Earle held it "a truly interesting specimen of fifteenth century English" well worthy of publication.

Why didn't one of these excellent folk write to me about it at the time?

F. J. FURNIVALL.

MS. ROOM, BRITISH MUSEUM,
28 September, 1893.

On the authority of Giraldus, Mr. Dimock comments on pages lxxx-lxxxii of his Preface, and thus concludes:

"Recent Irish scholars have quietly received Giraldus for what he is worth, as an impetuous, strongly biassed writer, whose statements have generally more or less of truth in them, but with much unfair one-sidedness. They have seen that his abuse is not confined to Ireland and the Irish, but is almost equally as fully lavished upon his own Wales and the Welsh; that, in fact, he has praise for scarcely any thing or body except himself and his near friends and relations. Some late Irish writers, under the reaction perhaps of his having been found too much fault with, seem to me to put more faith in Giraldus's history than it really deserves."

¹ His 'blethcher,' xevi/13, is the MS. 'blethelier,' 6/14 below; his 'foden,' xcvii/7 from foot, is the MS. 'fondene,' 8/28; his 'with,' xciv/19, is the MS. 'swith' very, 4/3 below; his 'onenth' (half), xcv/2, is the MS. 'euerich,' 4/16; his 'ichaushed,' xcv/23, is the MS. 'ibanshed,' 4/34 below; his 'inewed,' xcviii/17, is the MS. 'meued' moved, 10/12 below; and so on. The copier, Mr. J. P. Prendergast, didn't know his MS.

² And evidently a strong Churchman. See how he makes Henry II attend church-service daily 86/27, when Giraldus complains of his neglect of services. Other instances occur of like bits not in Giraldus.

SAMPLE OF THE LATER MS.

F. 4. 4, Trinity College, Dublin, p. 7 (middle of page).

For comparison with Chapter XIII of the other MSS.

pp. 30-35 below.

When the kinge did knowe his entent, and whether he would goe, he gave him fully leve, and warned him not. but with such leave as he hadde, he dighte and made him ready the wynter, till the begininge of may, he sente before him into Irelande a knyghte that was called Reymonde le gras;—with him, tenn knyghts, and fortye Squiers, and fourescore bowemen;—a man full hardy, and well proved in weapon; Roberts nephewe, and Morices Eldeste brothers sone. They arryved at a place called Dondoneuile, foure myle besouthe the hawen of Waterforde; and there they arreared a dicke, and a feble castell upon, of yards and turues [? MS. iureus]. The men of Waterforde, and with them Malaughlyne Ofolane, they did understande that they had such Neighbourhede which them lothed: they concluded that they would upon them, or enny more weare to them come. they assembled them together, well thre thowsande men, and wente over the water of sure, that partethe the twoe counties of leynester and of Mounester, and sett them in thre hosts, bouldely for to assaile the Englyshmen within there Castell. Reymonde and his men, thoughte they weare but fewe, they weare not fainte to fighte with uneven hoste, they assemblede them together; But, as noe wonder was, soe fewe men mighte nat fighte againste soe many; theie turned them againe to there receipte. the other, thinkinge that they departed in discomfetur, they brake there sheldruze, and followed them: and they weare not fully within the gate, but some of them weare rather in [than] thenglyshe men. Reymonde sawe that he and his weare in greate perill, and upon pointe to losse there lyves. he cried to his fellowes, and turned worthely upon there foemen. and the firste that came in, he clave his hedde, and throwly killed him: all thoste

weare dyscomfitted, and toke them to flighte. The others them followed into all the plaine, and layde them one soe, that in litle while they slowe of them fyve hundreth and moe; and the moste parte of thother fell downe into the see from the hie roke, and drowne themselves. in this fighte, was a knyghte that heighte William fferande, that did over well, and above all other. he was a man that hade semblante as thoughe he weare one the much yuell; and therefore he put him-selfe whear the moste perill was; for [he] raughte not whether death came betwen him and his yuell, or it weare overmuch smitte [? MS. suirtte] upon him. here the pride of Waterforde fell; all there mighte went to noughte: herof came the Englyshe hoppe and comforte; and to the Iryshe, dredd and wanhop; for it was never therbefore harde, that, of soe fewe men, soe greate a slaughter was done. but unwise counsaile they did thereafter, that turned them to much crueltie; ffor when the Maystrý was all thers, and all there foemen overcom, In the fighte weare taken well threscore men and tenn, that them had yelded, and weare the higheste and the richeste men of all the Cýtty, such that theye mighte have had the Citty deliuered for them, or els asmuch Catell as they woulde desire. Henry of mountud, that to them was come, and Reymonde, upon diuerse domes stroven whate they shoulde doe with there prisoners; ffor Reymonde travailede aboute for to deliuer them, as a man of Rewthefull mode, and thus saide to his fellowes: "Lordings, whate is us beste to doe with oure wretched prisoners? I saye nat that one anny manner one shoulde spare his foemen; but they be nat nowe oure foemene, but be men nat rebels, but in Battaile for to defende there county, overcome. me thinke they are nowe in such state, that we oughte better to have mercýe of them, and gyve them lyfe,—for to gyve others example to be boxom,—then cruely to doe them to deathe, wheare-throughe others, ffor feare of mystruste, the lesse will yeld them to us." When Reymonde had theise wourds saide, in all the folke was amoste none to graunte them lyfe; Arose up Henry amonge

them all, and this them saide: "I-noughe Remounde openly to us hathe spoken of mercý and almosedede,¹ how vnked¹ landes are wonne; and not with slaughter and burneing. whether Alixandr and Julius Cesar, that weare lords of all the wourde, wonne lands bý such way, I woulde Reymounde woulde me answeare. when they came to us well arrayed for to fighte, yf theie had wone the overhande and overcome us, woulde they, for almore and for rewth, haue had mercý one us? noe, I trowe not. therefore, but those one of twoe wayes: eyther doe manly that thinge whea[re]fore we bene come, and the folke that rebell againste us, with [out] any noyse, with weapone heartely bringe owt of dawes; otherwise, yf we shall doe almore-dede one them, and spare them, as Reymounde hath saide, lett us wend to oure shippes, and turne agayne; and lett we the wretched men houlde there lande, and Brouke it, without any challenge." Henries dome licked them better then Reymonds; and the Cittizens weare demed to death. They had noe wouste of waritrees; and therefore They ladd them to the clyffe of the see, and putt them downe, and drowned them.

of the firste goode adventure that him befell, they that beste weare worthye should haue there parte, and the hoste. all the towne of wexforde, with the twoe nexte countyes, he gave to Roberte Stephensson and to Morýce fitz Geraude, as forwarde was to-for made. other twoe nexte counties, he gaue to Henry of Mountmorthie,—nexte thay twoe, one the syde towarde waterforde,—a knyghte that came in that same flote, hym pridsome of knyghts, and came throughe thearle Richarde, more for to spye the land, then for to fighte.

¹⁻¹ Afterwards written above the line in MS.

+VII

CORRECTIONS BY HENRY BRADLEY, M.A.

FOR

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND.

EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY. No. 107.

Original Series, 1896.

- Boxom-fastines 62/18: this should be two words, buxom fastness, an obsequious covenant, meant to render *L. fucato foedere*.
- Costes: part of far-costes below.
- Ense 80/29: read Euse, eaves, edge, border: 'the wode evese (*ms. hevese*) voc. 159.'—Bradley's Stratmann.
- Far-costes 80/5: 'O.N. farkostr; means of conveyance, boat, ship, *Engl. Metr. Hom. xix.*'—*ib.*
- Fawes 96/2: perhaps the Irish fogha (O'Reilly), a dart, O.Ir. fogae (*Lat. jacula*).
- Folk place 50/15: the folk (for febyll in the Rawlinson MS.) was caught from the 'lond-folk' in the next line.
- Herrer 116/30: the Latin is 'et citra majoris auctoritatem urbem obtenturum.'—*Gir. Cambr. Op. v. 342*.
- I-quenyted 36/35: miswritten for Iquemed, pleased.
- I-suywed 116/9: read I-snywed, 'snowed' their arrows; the Latin is 'sagittarum . . . grandine perfuso.'
- Lygne 102/17: as fayre & lygne translates 'procerus et pulcher,' the word must mean 'tall'; perhaps it is a misreading for hyghe, high.
- Lyme 62/18: the Latin has *amorem*; the scribe must have misread luee (love) as lime, and transcribed it lyme.
- Ost 50/2: cannot mean 'burnt.' The word is superfluous; perhaps the translator at first wrote lytell ost (little host), and then altered ost into stonwal, but did not clearly enough expunge the rejected word.
- Priuisant 80/28: cannot mean 'foreseeing'; it is probably a mistake for pursiuant, pursuivant (the Latin is *satelles*).
- Ryuely 128/12: rifely, abundantly.
- Sheldrun 31/29 (R): company-formation, O.E. scild-truma (whence shelter); the Rawlinson MS. here preserves the right reading, that of the Dublin MS. being unmeaning.
- Spourges 112/3: ? for spronges, shoots, sprouts.
- porwe 28/12: ? through; wel porwe 'well through,' urgently (the Latin is 'omnibus modis').
- Trukked 48/9: ran short, trukien, O.E. trucian, fail, be lacking.
- Wecchene 36/31: cwecchen, to twitch, shake.
- Wenttene 108/8: for weten, know (pat is to weten = that is to say); the scribe was misled by seeing wentten (went) in the line above.
- Yonre 104/10: Youre 114/27: yovre, 3eofre, O. E. zīfre, greedy.

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND

FOUNDED ON THE *EXPUGNATIO HIBERNICA* OF
GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS

A PARALLEL TEXT

FROM TWO MSS., I. AB. 1425 A.D. MS. TRIN. COLL., DUBLIN, E. 2. 31;

II. AB. 1440 A.D. MS. RAWLINSON B. 490, BODLEIAN LIBRARY, OXFORD

THE ENGLISH CONQUEST OF IRELAND

FOUNDED ON

GIRALDUS CAMBRENSIS.

(MS. Trin. Coll., Dublin, E. 2. 31.)

[CHAPTER I.]

[Fol. 1 a.] **Y**N the tym that the kynges henry, þat was the kynges
When Henry II reigned in England, Dermot Macmurgħ ruled over Leinster, A. D. 1135-71. His folk hated him; [¹ &, an, a. [² heart]. but the wife of King Rory of Meath loved him, and sent for him when Rory was away. He took her to Leinster, A. D. 1152,

W

fadyr Richard & the kynges fadyr Iohñ, regned in englaund well, & ¹ heighe mañ in Irland; þat het dermod Macmorgħ, princes of leynyster, that is I-told' þe fiste parte of Irland. That dermod, 4 from the tym that he was lord' of lond; & foñ shold' gouerne, he went amonge his heighe men, and' so hard' ham biladde þat þay casten grete hat to hym, and' myche thay wax hym ageyñ in herth², þegħ þey ne durst nat oppenly shewe. Whañ he hade 8 longe whiñ þus bilad' hym amonge his men, bettidde an aduenture that turnede hym þer-aftyr to mych' harme; ffor in mythe was a kynges that hegth Rowry, & a well fayr wommañ to wif; and' as men tellede oft, and' soth it is I-found; that som of heme ben 12 to vnstable of herth², wher-throgħ many harmes ben oper-whiñ, þat ne beñ nat now al to rekne. This Rouryes wif worthen to þe loue of Macmurgħ moe þan hyr owñ lord; and he hir also, & this was longe; bot to-giddre ne myghtyñ þei nat com as 16 the wold; for hit betid' a tym þat hir lord' went owt of his contrey in-to fer londes, for grete nedes þat he hade to don. his wif a-waitede full well, & aspied' þat hir lord' most longe be owt of lond; send' to Macmurgħ, & bade hym, þat if he euer wold' his 20 will hawe of hir, that he shold' com to hyr, for sho was redy to do all þat hym likede. ¶ Macmorgħ name power with hym, and' went thar this lady was; & as hit be-spoke was, he name hir, & broght hir out of myth into leynestir, and heñ hir that to 24

OF THE CONQUESTE OF IRLAND BY ENGLYSH MËN.

(MS. Rawl. B. 490, Bodl. Libr.)

[CHAPTER I.]

IN the tyme that Kyng Henry, that was the kynges Fadyr [Fol. 1 a.]
 Rychard and the kynges Fadyr Ihoñ, regned in England, Capitulum 1^m.
 was an hey man in Irland, whos name was callyd Dermot Mac-
 murgh, Prince of leynystre, that is y-tolde the fyfte Parte of Leinster
 Irlande. That Dermot, from the tyme that he was lorde of lond, and is a fifth part of
 folke sholde governd, he werret cruely amonge his hey men, and so
 harde hame lade, that thay castyn grete hate to hym, and muche
 they were ayennes hym in herte, theght they ne dvrste nat opynly
 shewe. Whan he hadd thus longe tyme lade hym amonge hys
 men, be-felle an aduenture that turned hym ther-aftry to mych
 harme; For in myth was a kyng, whos name was Roury, and Tiernan
 hadd a wel fayre woman to wyffe; and as men tellyth ofte, and sith O'Rourke,
 hit is y-found, that some of them ben vnstabill of hert, wherfore king of
 many harmys ben ofte-tymes, that ben nat now all to reherse // Breifny.

This Rouries wyfe lowyd more Macmurgh than hyr owyn lorde; 'Varium et mutabile semper femina'
 and he hyr also, and this was longe; but to-giddy ne myght they (Virg. Aen. iv. 569).
 not come as they wolde; for hit be-felle in a tyme, that hyr lord
 went out of his contrey into fere londys, for grete neddes that he
 hadde to done. His wyfe be-thought hyr ful well, and, Supposynge
 that hyr lord moste longe be out of londe, Sche sente to Mac-
 murgh, and sayde to hym, that yf he euer wolde his wille haue of
 hyr, that he sholde cvme to hyr, for she was redy to do al that
 hym lykyd //

Macmurgh toke wyth hym many men, and went there this lady A. D. 1152.
 was. and as hit was be-for spoke be-tweñ them both, he toke hyr O'Rourke's
 wyth hym out of myth into leynestere, and helde hyr there to hys wife carried off.

A.D. 1152. his will. Nat for-það sho grad and cried, as thogh he nam̄ hiŕ
 and kept her there. agaynes hiŕ will, as hit nas nat so. Than hir lord hit herde, he
 was ther-of tened swith stronge, and mych moŕ of the shamme
 Rory and þat to hym̄ was doñ, þan of the barme; all that he mygth do, 4
 his ally, he didde, for to awreke hym̄; he sent after his owñ power,
 the King of Con- ande eke all þat he myght of other; and the kyng of Connagth,
 naught, þat was that tym̄ lorde of Irland, com̄ to hym̄ with his power:
 march into he gadrede so moch folke (?) þat noñ end nas, and com̄ into 8
 Leinster. leynestr for to wreke hym̄ of his shame. Tho Macmorgh this
 herd, he sent to his meñ þat þay sholde hym̄ helpe ayeyñ his
 fomen̄ þat þus werē comyng toward hym̄. They bethoghten
 Mac- ham̄ of the teñ & the traysoñ þat they ham̄ hade ydoñ per- 12
 murch's to-fore | and forsoke, al out of dout, þat þay nogth woth hym̄
 men refuse helpe; and many of ham̄ openly turned to his fomen̄ ayeyns hym̄,
 him; ffor to wreke ham̄ of the iniurie þat he ham̄ had doñ. Macmorgh
 saw þat power̄ hym̄ failled, & euerich half he was amyde his 16
 fomen̄ beset. he was mañ of hegh hert; and with þe litill power̄
 þat he had, he werrede as long as he myght; bot he ne myght
 nat all-way all-oñ ayeyns all the lande folke | he was so narowe
 bilad̄ þat nedes he most thof deth, other þe lond leue; he saw 20
 þat noñ oper remedy was: he went to the see, and fond̄ shippe
 so he sails reddy, and wynde at will, & passede oure into england, with well
 to Eng- few with hym̄; and on this maner he sawit his lif, & lefte lond
 land, A. D. & lede & all his other good. Hereby þat meñ may witte, þat 24
 1166, be a mañ of neuer so mych power, bettre hym is þat hys men hym
 loue þane hate. ¶ Whane Macmorgh was thus icome in-to
 england, al hys thoght was how he myght hym best worck of the
 schame þat hyme was done, & of þat þat he was so vilich out of 28
 hys kynd lond I-dryue, he nyst of whom he myght bettre besech
 [*Fol.1b.] help þane of þe kyng. And þe kyng was þane fer in the
 and then realme of fraunce for grete nedes þat he hade to done. Macmorgh
 to France, passed ouer to hym. þe kyng fayr hym vndrefyng, * & with mych 32
 to ask Henry II's mane shipe. and whan had he tolde hyme the enchesoun of hys
 aid. man shipe. and whar-for he was out of hys londe ibanshed,
 þe kyng was swyth wo therfor, & good hert hadde hym to helpe,
 nañ oper grete nedes þat he hade to done. Whane he ne myght 36

wylle. And ther-fore she Cryed, and mad moche sorow and lemen- A. D. 1152.
tacioñ, as thogh he toke hyr ayeynes hir wyll: As hit was not So /

Than hyr lorde hit herd, he was ther-of full stronge a-greued, and
mych more of the shame that to hym was don, than for the harme. O'Rourke is wroth at the shame done him, and
Al that he myght do, he dyd, forto be wroke on hym. he Sente
after his owyn men, and eke al that he myght of othyr; and the
kyng of Connaght, that In that tyme was lorde of Irlande, come to
hym wyth his Power. And he gaderid so myche Pepyll, that they invades Leinster.
were vnnvmerable, Comynge Into leynystre, forto be vengyd of his
shame //

Tho Macmurgh her[de ther]of, he Sent to his men, that thay Mac-
sholde hym helpe ayeynes his foe-men, that thus weryn comynge murgh's
to-warde hym.

They bethoghten them of cruelte and the traysouñ that to ham
he hadd done therto-fore, And forsoke al out of dowte that thay
wolde noght hym helpe. And many of them opynly turned to his
Ennemys ayeynes hym, ffor to wroke tham of the Iniury that he
to them hadd done //

Macmurgh sawe that his men failed hym; and on Euche halwe men fail
he was amyd his ennemys besegyð. He was a man of hey herte; him,
and wyth the fewe Pepill that he hadd, he werrid as longe as he
myght; but he ne * myght not alway dure ayennes the Londe folke. [*Fol. 1 b.]
He was so narrow bylade, that nedys he mvste suffyr deth, or the
londe leue. he saw that non othyr remedy was. He went to the
see, and fovnde shippe redy, and wynde at wyll, and passyd owyr so he
into England, with wel fewe with hym; and on this maner he sauyd crosses to
his lyfe, and lefte lond and lede, and al othyr good // Here-by men England,
may witte that, be a mā neuer of so mych Powere, bettyr hit is to A. D. 1166,
hym, that his men hym loue, than hate // Whan Macmurgh was
thus y-come Into England, al his thought was, how he myght hym
best wreke of the shame that hym was y-don, and of that that he
was so shamfully out of his kynde londe I-dryue. He wyst not of
whom he myght bettyr beseke helpe and sokovre, than of the
kyng. And the kyng was then fer in the reame of Fraunce, for and then
gret nedys that he hadd to don. Macmurgh passyd ouer to hym. to France,
the kyng fayre hym vndyrfonge, and with mych vyrchipp. And where
when he hadde tolde hym the cause of hys comynge to hym, and Hen. II
the cause where-for he was out of his Land y-baneshyd, the kyng welcomes
was sory therfor, and good-will hym hadd to helpe, nere othyr grete him.
nedys that he hadde to don. Whan he ne myght nat ellis do, he

A. D.
1165-7.

Henry
appeals to
his sub-
jects to
help Mac-
murch,

who
returns to
Bristol,

and agrees
to give
his
daughter
and Lein-
ster to
Earl
Strugoill,
in return
for aid.
Macmurch
goes to
South
Wales,
A. D. 1167,

where Rys
is prince.

nat elles do, he name of hym homage, & othes, & lete hym mak
hys lettres, that thus mych ben to vndrestond: 'Henry, throgħ
gode-is *grace* kyng of englond, duc of normandy & of Acquitayne,
& erl of angoy, to al hys liegemen, englyssh, normannes, Walshe, 4
Scottes, and to al *oper* that to hym ben subiect, sendeth gretynge.
Whan pese lettres to yow ben i-com̄, witte ye þat we, dermot,
prince of leynester, in oūr grace and in oūr goode will have
receyuet; wharfore þat aȝ þay that hym̄ as oūr lawfull mān 8
heh[pe] willeth, into his lond' hym̄ to restore, oūr grace and oūr goode
leue haue þay *per-to*.' Whān Macmorch̄ had the kynges *lettres*
thus y-purchasede—þe kyng hym yaf also richely þat hym̄ nedet
of his tresour—he nam̄ leue of the kyng, & wentt in-to englond 12
& com̄ to Bristow, & soiourned̄ thār a whill; & so mych̄ the
bletheliē, for *per* com̄ oft shippes theder out of Irland̄, & men̄,
þat he myght hir̄ tythyng of the lond' & of his folkis, for his hert
was mych̄ there-to. The whill þat he ther̄ was, weȝ oft he let rede 16
þe kynges wrytte to-for the peple; & largely he beheght londes and'
rentes, & Rich yiftes, if any wer that hym̄ helpe wold. Bot he ne
fond' noon̄ *wit̄h*-aȝ, that such̄ tyng wolde ne durst vndirtake,
till þat the erle of Strugoill, Richard þe Erles sōn Gilbert, com̄ 20
to hym̄. Ther was þe *parlement* so longe y-dryue betwēn ham̄,
& sekiritesse y-makyd, þat the Erle shold' hym̄ helpe *wit̄h* aȝ
his power̄ þe next somer *per-after*, and he shold' yeue þe Erle
his doghtre, *wit̄h* aȝ þe lond' of leynestre. ¶ Whane this was on 24
this maner ypu[rueied, for the grete] talent þat Macmorch̄ had'
to bēn neer̄ his lond'—as mān tynke [no place so¹] mery lyghtly, as
in his kynd' stidde,—he went hym thennes in-to south walys, to
seynt dauyes town, vp-on̄ þe see; & mych̄ hit gladet his hert, 28
thogh̄ he strongly mourned, þat he myght in fayr weder haue
somedell syght of his lond'.

¶ In that tym̄ was prince in wales, Rys, Gryffynes sōn, on *per*²
the kyng of england; & a swith good mān bisshoppe of seynt 32
dauy, and was his nam̄, 'ahon dauy'; & both þe prince & eke þe

¹ Dermitius, desiderio visendae patriae plurimum accensus, eaque dulcedine,
qua natale solum cunctos ducere solet, amplius allectus.—Gir. Camb., *Expug-*
natio Hibernica, cap. ii, *Op.* v. 228, Rolls Series. ² under.

toke of hym homage *and* othis, *and* lette hym make his letteres, that thus myche bene to vnderstonde // ‘Henry, throw goddys grace, kynge of England, Duke of Normandy and of acquytanye, *and* Erle of angoy, to al his lege men, Englyssh, normannes, Walshe, Scotcs, and to al othyr that to hym ben subiecte / Sendyth gretynge. Whan this *lettres* ben to yow y-come, witte ye that we, Dermot Prince of Lelynstre, in oure grace *and* in oure goode-wyll, haue receuet; wherfor that al thay that hym / as oure lafull man he[l]pe will, Into his londe hym to restore, oure grace and oure good-wyll haue they therto’ // ‘When Macmurgh had the kynges Letteres thus y-Purchasyd; (the kyng hym yafe also rychely, that hym nedyd of his tresoure,) He toke Leue at the kyng, *and* went into England; *and* come to Brystow, *and* soyorned ther awhyle; *and* myche radyr, for ther come oft shippis thedyr out of Irland, *and* men, that he myght hyr thithyng of the Londe *and* of his Pepyll; for his hert was mych therto // The whyle that he there was, well oft he made to be redd the kynges *lettres* to-for the Pepyll; and largely he promysyd londys, and rentis, *and* othyr ryche yeftys, to them that hym wolde he[l]pe. But he ne found none, wyth al that, that Suche thyng wolde ne druste vndyrtake, tyll that the Erle of Strugoill, Richarde, the Erlis Sonne Gylbert¹, come to hym. Ther was the Parlement² so longe y-dryue be-twen ham, and sekyrnesse y-makyd, that the Erle sholde hym helpe *with* al his Powere the nexte somere ther-aftyr, And he sholde yeue the Erle his doghtyr, *with* al the lond of leynstre // Whan this was on this maner purueyed³, For grete affeccion that Macmurgh had to ben neere his londe, (as man thynkyth no Place so Myrry lyghtly as in his Kynde * Place,) [^{Fol. 2 a.}] he went fro thens Into Sutte Walis, to Seynt Dauyes toun vp-on the see; *and* mych hit gladdyd his herte, thegh he strongly moryd; that he myght in fayre weddyr haue somdel Syght of his lond / In that tyme was prynce in walis, Rys, Gryfynes Sonne, vndyr the kyng of England; And a wyrshipphul man, Bishope of Seynte Dauy, *and* also his name was dauy⁴. And both the Prince *and* also

A. D. 1166-7.

The Kyngys letteres

in favour of Murrough,

who comes back to England,

and is promist help by Richard, Earl of Striguil.

¹ Camden adds ‘dictus Strengbow, fortis arcus.’—D.² Colloquium.³ His itaque seriatim hoc ordine completis.⁴ Davidque secundo

Meneviae praesidente.

A.D. 1167. bisshop well wȳrshipfully vndrefyngē Macmorgħ, & mych̄ reut had of his enemyte, & of his mych̄ lostes, & of þe mych̄ shamme þat hym̄ was i-doñe.

[CHAPTER II.]

Rys has in
prison a
Sir Robert
Fitz-
stephen,
once
Constable
of South
Wales.

[*Fol. 2a.]

He sets
Robert
free, on
condition
that he
and his
half-
brother
Maurice
Fitz-
gerald
help Mac-
murgħ.

[¹ MS.
kyng.]

Macmurgħ
sails to
Ireland,
and
winters at
Kerns.

In the tȳmē þat this was so, was in prison with þe prince 4
of wales, a knyght þat heght Robert Stefenes-soñ, þat soñ
tyñd had y-be constable of aȝ south walys, & many il turnes had
idoñe vpon þe princes meñ whañ þay any thȳnge mysdedeñ; &
þrogh traison of his owne meñ he was I-take & delyuered to 8
the prince; & þre yer he was I-hold in prisonne ar Macmorgħ
theder cam̄. Oft þe prince hym̄ profred to delyuer hym̄ out of
prison, so þat he wold be his helppē to werry vp-oñ þe kyngē;
bot Robert was a trew mañ, & for no tyngē wold do thȳngē 12
wher-of he myght be þer-after I-wyted of wntrowth. Thañ—þrogh
besechȳngē of * þe bisshope & of Moryce fitz-Geraud, þat wered
Robertes two bretheren on his moþer half,—he was delyuered owt
of prison on this manere: þat he & Morice his brother shold, þe 16
next somer, wend in-to Irland, with ar power to helppē Macmorgħ;
& he shold hym yeue þe toñ of weysford, with þe twey next
cantredes; & of this was good sekernes Imaked on ether half.
¶ Whañ this thȳng¹ was aȝ thus bespokene, Macmorgħ ne myght 20
no lengere suffre þat he ne most to his land wend; thegh he ne fond
nat þe adventures þat he soght, such as hȳme lif weř, ne non
other power he ne broght with hym̄ than he out ladde. He had
shippe redy, and good wynd; and passed ouer in-to Irland; & boldly 24
aryued in lond þer he had many fomen and fewe frendes. from þe
see he went to fernes; and well simply he lyued þer aȝ þe wynttyr
with the Clergie of þe church, wiche well fayr hym̄ vndrefyngē,
and by hare power to hym̄ & to his, fondeñ þat hame was nede. 28

[CHAPTER III.]

A.D. 1169.

Fitz-
stephen
collects

30 knyghts,
60 squires,
and 300
foot-men

Vnder that tyme, Robert Steunes-soñ hym̄ dyght to
wend in-to Irland, as a mañ þat on aȝ maner wold hold
lawfully his trowthe and his behest. he hade purueied hym̄ of
arowes; and knyghtes and þe skyers well I-horsed and well 32
y-wepened; all of his owñ kyne and of his owne nurtur. Thay

the Byshope wel wyrchippully vndyrfonge Macmurgh, and myche A.D. 1167.
Pite hadd' of his Enemyte and of his mych Lostys, And of the mych
shame that hym was done.

[CHAPTER II.]

IN the tyme that this was so, was in Prisonne wyth the Prince *Capitulum*
of Walys, a knyght, whos Name was Robert Steues-Sonne, *2^m.*
that sometyme hadd' y-be constabill of al Suthe Walis, and many
yll tvrnys hadd' y-doñe vp-on the Princes men, when thay eny
thyng mysdedyn; and through traysoun of his owyn men, he was
y-take and delyuerid' to the Prince. And thre yere he was holde
in prison, are Macmurgh thedyr come. Oft the Prince hym
proferyd' to delyuer hym out of pryson, So that he wolde be his
helpe to wer vp-on the kynge; but Robert was a trew man, and for
nothyng wold' do thyng wher-of he myght be ther-aftyr reprovit'
of vntrowth //

Than,—through be-sechyng of the Byshope and of Moryce fiz- *Interveni-*
Geraud; that weryn Robertys two bretheryn on his Modyr syde,—he *entibus*
was delyueryd' out of Pryson on this manere: That he and Morice *igitur*
his brodyr sholde, the nexte Somyr, wende Into Irland; *uterinis*
with har Powere, to helpe Macmurgh; and he sholde hym yeue the *ejusdem*
toun of weysford; *fratribus,*
with the twey nexte cantredes: and of this was good' *&c.*
swrte y-fondyd' on euery syde. / Whan this was al thus Spokyñ,
Macmurgh myght not lengyr Suffyr that he ne mvste to his Lond'
wende, thegh he ne found' nat the aduentures that he Soght, suche
as hym lykyd', ne none othyr Powere he ne broght wyth hym, than
he out-ladd'. / he had' shipe redy, and good' wynd', and Passyd' ouer
into Irland, and boldely arryued' in londe ther-as he hadd' many
Enemys and few frendys. / From the see he went to Fernys; and
wel sympylly he lyued' there al the wyntyre, with the Clergy of the
chyrche, whych wel fayre hym vndyrfonge, and by har Power to hym
and to his, foundyn that ham was nede.

[CHAPTER III.]

A.D. 1169.

Vnder that tyme, Robert Steues-Sonne hym dyght to wende *Capitulum*
Into Irland, as a man that on al maner wolde holde lawfully *3^m.*
his throuth, and his behest. He had Purveyed' hym of xxx^{ti}
knyghtes and lx Squyeris, and ccc of fote-men with bowes and
arowes; And the knyghtis and the Squyris wel y-horsyd' and wel
wepenyd'; al of his owyn kyñ and his owyn nurture. Thay dyddyn
Nec promissionis immemor, nec fidei contemptor, &c.

and lands
at Banow,
c. May 1,
1169.

Aprophecy
of Merlin
was thus
fulfilld.

Macmurgħ
and Fitz-
stephen
unite their
forces,

diddeñ hame to sailh att send dauyes, and arýuedeñ at Banow
in Irlaund; weñ vnsikere on euery halfe. thay vncharged hare
shippes, & made hañ loges on lond. Thane was fulfilled a prophecie
þat merlyñ seid of this commynge: “A knyght *with* party armes 4
shall formost breke þe clos of Irland.” Such armes bare þat
Robert. he send soñ to *Dermod Macmorgħ*, and didde hyñ to
witt of his commynge; and þe thedyngge spronge fort soñ into all
þe lond; what folke was to hyñ Icoñ. and of þo that to-for hyñ 8
hade I-left, and litiñ told by hyñ, commyn soñ to hyñ, so þat he
had I-gadered fywe hundred meñ. he wentt witt this folk to þe
Englysse-meñ; and [when] þay coñ to-geddē, euery of hañ was the
gladder for other. Ther was the forward meued bethweñ hañ, 12
and othes y-swoř, and sekernesse I-made to conferme all þe
forward, as hit there-by-for was *purueied* by-for the prince of wales.

[CHAPTER IV.]

and inarch
to Wexford,
about
twelve
miles from
Banow.

The town-
men at first
resolve
to meet
them in the
field, but,
on seeing
their array,
retire
within the
city.

Whan this sekernesse was thus y-maked, þese twey maner
folkes, with ooñ will, and *with* ooñ hert, *with* Baners 16
i-lacet, nam the wey toward weysford. The meñ of þe self toñ
wered ywar of hañ commyng, and tok hañ to rede—for þe tother
wered so few, & day so many—that þay wold figth *with* hañ in þe
pleyne felde. They cam owt of the toñ arraied on har maner; bot 20
whan þay sawe the Englysmen, *with* hors I-helled *with* yreñ
harnes, hañ-self weñ I-wepned *with* haubergeons, and Bright
helmes and sheldes, wich the sawe neuer *per-to-for*, they toke
a-nother rede, and turned ayeyñ to toñ; & all þat was *with-owt* þe 24
walles, thay sett a-fyr and brent, & redied hañ to hold hañ
with-yne the wallys *with* streynthe. Robert *with* his meñ went
strongly for to assayñ to toñ, & sette the bowmeñ for to wer the
[*Fol.2b.] fight of the kernels, and turned the wepned meñ to fill þe *diches. 28
they *with-yn* defendet hañ stalwarthly *with* stonnes and stakes,
wher-of they wer I-warned; and wer many I-hurt whit-yn and eke
The assault *with-out*, so that thay *with-out* mosten nedes leue of the assaut,
on Wexford & withdraw hañ. Among hañ was a yong knyght þat het 32
is success-fully resisted.
Robert de Barri has a Robert de Barry, þat drogħ yong blodes hete, and for hys
stalwardnes, reght nat of his lif: as he wold *with* þe formoste
passe ouer the wall, he hent a dynt *with* a greth stone vpon þe

ham to sayle at Seynt Dauyes, and londyd̄ at the Banow in Irland, A.D. 1169.
 wel vnshykyr on euery syde. they vnchargid̄ har shippis, *and* made
 ham logis on londe *. Than was fulfillid̄ a prophesy that Merlyn [*Fol. 2b.]
 seyde of this comynge: 'A knygh[t] *with* Party armys shall formyst Party per
pale gules
& ermyn
& saltyer
contre-
chaunged.
 breke the clos of Irland.' Such armys bare that Robert. He sent
 sone to Dermot Macmurgħ, and didde hym to vnderstand̄ of his
 comynge; And thythyngis spronge forth sone Into al the londe, what
 Pepyll was to hyñ coñe. And many of them that to-forid̄ hym
 hadd̄ forsake and lefte, *and* lytill seett by hym, comen sone to hym,
 So that he hadd̄ gaderid̄ v. C. men. / He went *with* this pepyll to
 the Englysh̄ men; And when thay come to-geddre, euery of them Miles
bipartitus
armis,
Hiberniae
claustra
primus
irrupet.
 was the gladdyr for othyr / Ther were the for-sayde conontis
 reheryd̄ *and* mevid̄ betwen tham, and othis sworn, *and* sekyrnesse
 made, to conferme all the forsayde, as hit was ther-to-fore Purveyed
 be-fore the Prince of Walys.

[CHAPTER IV.]

WHAN this sekyrnyssse was thus madd̄, this two maner Capitulum
 Pepyll, wyth on wyll, and *with* ooñ herte, *with* baners 4^m.
 lacyd̄, toke ther wey towardes weysford. The men of the toun
 weryn y-ware of thare comynge, *and* toke them to consayll,—for the
 othyr weryn so few, and thay so many,—that thay wolde figh[t] *with*
 ham in the Playn felde. Thay come out of the toun arrayed
 on ther maner; but when they sawe the Englysh̄ men, *with* hors equestrem
turmam
loricis et
clipeis
galeisque
fulgenti-
bus in-
signem . . .
 y-hellyd̄ *with* Iryn harneys, ham-Selfe wel wepenyd̄ *with* hauber-
 geons, and bryght Salletis and sheldys, whych thay sawe neuer
 there-to-forid̄, thay toke anothis consayll, *and* turned̄ ayayn to
 toun; and al that was *with*-out the wallis, thay sette afyre *and*
 brente; *and* arrayed tham to kepe ham *with*-In the wallis *with*
 Streynth. Robert, wyth his men, went Strongly to assaylle the
 toun, *and* sette the bowmen forto were the fyght of the propugna-
cula vero
sagittariis
eminus
observanti-
bus . . .
 cornelis, *and* turned̄ the wepenyd̄ men to fill the dichis. thay
 wythin defendyd̄ ham boldely *with* Stones and Stakys, wher-of
 they were y-warnyd̄, [. . . .] and mosten nedis lewe the assaute, and
 wythdrawe ham / Amonge ham was a yong knyght / whos name
 was Robert de barry, that, throughe yonge blodis hette, *and* for his juvenili
insultans
calore . . .
 boldnys, roght not to lesse the lyfe / As he wolde wyth the fryst
 Passe ouer the walle, he hadd̄ a stroke *with* a grette stoñe vp-on

A. D. 1169.
narrow
escape.

The assail-
ants of the
town burn
the ships
they find
on the
strand.

Next day,
the
townsmen
surrender.

Macmurch
gives
grants
of land to
Maurice
Fitzgerald
and
Hervey of
Mount-
maurice.

heued̄ al *with* the helme, þat he fel down yn the ground̄ of þe
dic̄h; & vnnethes he was I-draw vp throḡh his felowes, þat mych̄
put har lyf in aduentur̄ for to saw his lif. The cry was well
gret on euery syde, for this knyght þat thus was I-hurt. Thay 4
with-drow ham̄ fro the wallys and̄ wenten ham̄ to þe strond̄; and̄
all þe shippes þat þay þer fond̄, thay settene a-fyre. And .O. shippe
þer was, that was I-cōm̄ owt of Brittain̄e aftyr cheffar̄, and̄ was
y-chargēt *with* whet & *with* wynes, and̄ lay I-anc̄red in the 8
haune: the best parte of the englisemen̄ wenten̄ *with* bottes
and̄ toke his shippe. þe shippemen̄ werne many, and̄ saw that þer
weren bot a few englys in the shippe, & the wynd̄ was of þe lond̄;
thay cutte the cable of the ankre, and̄ þe wynd̄ bare the shippe 12
in toward̄ the see: her fellowes saw this, and̄ wenten̄ after *with*
bottys; and̄ vnnethe *with* rowyng, and̄ *with* gret peril of all har
lyues, þay come ayeyn to lond̄. Macmorḡh saw this, & weren̄
sore amaied, for thay wend̄ neuer more þat on [of] ham̄ shold̄ haw 16
cōm̄ to lond̄ a-lyue. The assaut was I-left all þat day. A-morowe,
whan masse was I-herd̄, al þe host þay wentene to the assaut
wislyere and̄ warliere þan thay didden̄ the day befor, and̄ strusten
as well to sleght as to streynth. The mēn̄ of the tōn̄ sawē ham̄ 20
commyng, and wer right̄ sor̄ aferd̄ that day shold̄ nat withstond̄
the assaute, and vndrestonden al-so that *with* wronḡ day holden
ayaj̄n her lord̄; thay tok ham̄ to red, and besoghten pees; &
drogh̄ be-sech̄ynḡe of twe bissoppes, that þat t̄ym̄ weren *with*-yn 24
the toun, and other possible men al-so *with* ham, thay yolden
ham̄ al to Macmor[gh]; and four̄ hostages, the best þat he wold̄
chese, delyuered to hym̄ for the pees, and trywly *with* hym̄ for
to hold̄ frome þat t̄ym̄ forward, as har kyndly lord. Macmorḡh, 28
as wise & war̄, ffor-thy that he wold̄ that þe out-commyn men
shold̄ haw the bettre hert, and wiil, hym̄ for to serue, he bethoght
þat, of the fyrst good aduentur̄ þat hym̄ was befall, þay that
best weren worthy shold̄ hawe har̄ parte, and þe host. Al þe 32
ton of weysford, *with* twey cantredes aller-next, he yaf to Robert,
steuenes sone, and to Morice fitz-Geraud̄, as forward̄ was to-fōr̄
maked; othere thwey cantredes he yaf heruy of Mountmorthy,—
neghest thay tweyn on the syd toward Waterford,—a knyght þat 36

the hedde al *with* the Sallet, that he fell down to the grovnde of the dyche ; *and* vnnethis he was vp-rerid^d through his fellovys, that myche Put har lyfe in aduenteure forto sawe his lyfe. The cry was well grette on euery syde, for this knyght that thus was y-hurte. Thay wythdrow ham all from the wallis, *and* wenten to the stronde ; *and* al the Chippis that they ther found^d, thay setten a fyre. And oo shippe ther was, that was y-come out of Brytayne aftyr cheffare, *and* was y-chargid^d *with* whete and *with* wyues, *and* lay y-ancred^d in the Havyn. The beste Parte of the Englyshⁿ men wenten wyth botis, and toke this shippe : the Chippmen weryn many, *and* saw that ther weryn but a fewe Englyshⁿ men in the shippe, *and* the wynd was on the londe syde ; thay cvtte the Cabyls of the ancre, *and* the wynd bare the Chippe to-ward the see. Her Fellouys sawe this, *and* wentyn¹ aftyr wyth botis ; *and* vnnethe *with* rowyng, *and* wyth grette Perill of al there lyues, they come ayeyn to lond^d. Macmurghⁿ saw this, *and* was sore aferde, for they wende neuer * more that one of Ham sholde haue come to Londe a-Lyue. The assaute Was Lefte al that day. A-morrow, whan masse was herd^d, al the Oste the[n] wenten to the assaute wyslyer and waryr than thay diddyn the day to-fore, and trusten as well to sleght as to streynth. The men of the toun saw ham comyng, *and* were ryght sore aferde that thay ne sholde not wythstonde the assaut, *and* vndyrstodyⁿ also that *with* wronge thay heldyn ayeyⁿ her lorde. thay toke ham to consayll, *and* besoghten Pees ; *and*, throug besechyng of two Bisshopis that that tyme weryn wythin the toun, *and* othir Pesibbill men also *with* ham, thay yoldyn ham al to Macmurghⁿ ; *and* foure Hostagis, the beste that he wolde chese, delyuerid^d to hym for the Pees, *and* trewely wyth hym forto holde from that tyme forward^d, for har trew Lorde / Macmurgh, as wysse and ware, For cause that he wolde that the strangeres sholde haue the bettyr hert *and* will, hym forto serwe, he bethoght hym that, of the fryste good^d aduenteure that to hym was fall, thay that best weryn worthy, they sholde haue there Parte, *and* the hegheste. All the toun of weysford^d, *with* twey cantredes alther-nexste, he yafe to Robert Steuenes-sonne *and* to Moryce fiz-Geraud^d, as the Promes to-for was made / othyr twey cantredes he yafe Heruey of Montmvrthy,—nexste to thay two on the

A. D. 1169.

A Breton ship with wheat and wine is taken by English sailors.

The French cut their cables and set sail ; but the English are rescued.

[wentyn, MS.]

[*Fol. 3 a.]

The allies march to assault Wexford again ;

but it is yielded to them.

It is given to Fitz-Stephen and Fitz-Gerald.

A. D. 1169. com̄ in that same * flote, hym priddesum of knyghtes, and com̄ [*Fol.3a.] progh the Erle Richard, more for to spýe the lond' than to fight.

[CHAPTER V.]

The united forces invade Ossory, to the prince of which country Macmurgħ was a bitter enemy.

Vhan this was thus I-don al after har' will, they tok *with* hame the folk of weysford; and wenten ham̄ toward' Ossery, with 4
 ferd' as myght by tre thousand meñ; and was than prince of
 Ossory, Macdonenild; a mān þat was *Macmorogh* swith loth and
 all his meñ, for mych' shame that thay had hym i-do. At þe
 begýnyng, as thay com̄ in-to the contrey, in narrow weys drogh 8
 woddes and' mores, thay fonden the meñ of the contrey stalwarth
 for to defend' har' lond'; & mych' tene ham̄ didde, ar that day myght
 [take] the pleyne; and' eke into the pleyne thay folwed' ham̄ full
 fresly. the horsmañ saw this, and' turned manly vp-on ham, & 12
 anoon slown right many of ham̄, & discomfited' ham̄ euerychone.
 And' thay þat þe horsmen kest to ground' *with* speres and' *with*
 swerdes, þe yrisshe fotemeñ smotene of the heddes. Whan þe
 slaght was all I-do, and' har enymjes all ouer-comen, thay 16
 broghten well ccc heudes², and kesten at *Macmorogh* feet. he
 be-held' ham̄, & tried euery of ham̄ by ham̄-self, for to know hame,
 & hild' vp his handes and' tanked' god almyghty ful Inwardly.
 Oon hede ther was, a-monge þe otheṛ, of a man that he ouer-dede 20
 and' mych' hated; he name hit be the heeṛ and' by the eers, and'
with girslich' bit, as no mañ ne oweth to done; *with* his teeth
 he karue of his nose and' both lippes. There-after þey wenteñ
 fortheṛ into the contrey, slown, robeden, and branden full manly 24
 al þat hame withstonden, in-to the tym the prince of Ossory, by
 consail of his meñ, send' to ham̄, & be-soght pees: the pees was
 graunted' whan he hit bysoght, vp-on good ostages, and' othes
 I-sweṛ, þat he, to his lord' *Macmorgh*, shold' be trew, and' trowth 28
 hold; trywly serue fro that tyme forward'. in these fightes as in
 many othere, thogh that in the englishe host noon weṛ bot good
 and stalward; Robert þe Barṛ and Meiler fiz-henry weren thay
 that best deden. Thay weren both jong knyghtes, and Robert 32
 Steuenes-sonnes neues; the oon his brotheṛ sone, the otheṛ his
 susteres sone; of diuerse maners, both³ of hardnes & of stalworthnes

They defeat him,

and Macmurgħ triumphs in a brutal way.

Peace is made with the prince of Ossory.

Robert de Barri and Meiler Fitzhenry fight best.

¹ a small w is inside the V.

² heuedes, heads.

³ but.

syde toward' watyrford¹,—a knyght that come in that same flitte, A.D. 1169. hym thyrdesum of knyghtes, and' come throug the Erle Rychard, ^{1 mari con-} more forto spy the londe than to fyght. ^{terminos.}

[CHAPTER V.]

Whan this was thus don al aftyr har will, thay toke with ^{Capitulum} than the Pepill of weysford, ^{v^m.} and wenten ham to-ward' Ossory, with oste as myght be by thre Mⁱ. men². And was than Prince of Ossory, Macdonenylde, a man that was myche be-hatyd' of Mac- ^[² cum exercitu virorum quasi trium milium.] murgh, for myche shame that thay hadd hym donne. At the begynnyng, as thay come into the contrey, in narrow weyes throug woddis and mores, thay foundyn the men of the contrey bolde forto defende har londe; and mych sorrow ham didd', ar thay mygh[t] take the Playne: and when thay come to the Playne, thay folwid ham ful fresly. the hors-men saw this, and turned' boldely vp-on ham, and anoone slowyn rygh[t] many of ham, and dys-comfited ham euerychoñ. And thay that the hors-men keste to ground' wyth Sperys and wyth Swerdis, the Iryssh footte-men Smoten of ^{300 heads of foes are brought to Mac-} the hedis. Whan the slaght was al y-do, and har ennemys al ^{murgh.} ouer-come, thay broghten wel ccc. hedis, and kesten at Macmurgh is fete. he behylde ham, and' tvrned' euery of tham³ by hym-Selfe ^[³ than, MS.] forto know tham, and hilde vp his handis, and thankyd almyghty god' ful Inwardly. Oone hede ther was, amonge the othyr, of a man that he gretly dreddid' and myche hatid'; he toke hit by the heeres ^{He bites off the nose and lips of one.} and by the Ers, and grymly hit bitte, as no man sholde haue down; wyth his tethe he kutte of his nose and bothe lippis. Ther-aftyr ^{His men kill, rob, and slay, till Macdonough sues for peace.} they wenten fourdyr Into the contrey, kildyn, robedyn and brandyñ ^[*Fol.3 b.] ful boldely al that ham wythstodyn, into the tyme the Prynce of ossory, by consaylle of his men, sent to ham, and besoght Pees. the Pees was graunted' whan he hit be-soght, vp-on good' Ostagis, and othis y-Sworñe, * that he, to His Lord Macmurgh, shold be trewe, and trowth Hold, and trewely Serwe fro that tyme forth. In this fyghtes as in many othyr, thought that in the Englysh hoste noone were but good' and bolde, Robert de barry and Meyler fiz-henry weryn thay that best diddyn: they wer both yong knyghtes, and Robert Steuenes-sones emys⁴ both, the one his brodyr sonne, the ^{4 nevens, nepotes.} othyr his Systyr Sonne; Of dyuers maners, but of hardynes and

A. D. 1169. mostdele al I-lých; ffor Meyler was a mañ that ouer mych desyred to be I-preisede, and þat meñ sholden mych speke of his stalwardnes, and preisen hym. Robert was kýndlye, hardy, [*Fol. 3 b.] & stalwarde, *and euer with the forthmost in euery fight and 4 in euery peril, bot he hatede notyng so mych as that me shold speke of his stalwardnes, ne hyme preiese. The whill the host was thus in Ossory, befel þat þay wered a nyght I-loget in an old castell, & aboute; and these tweyn, as hañ wone was, 8 A phantom army at night creates terror among the English; weren both I-hosted to-gedderes: ffeñ with-yn nyght come an host vp-on ham, of so mych folk as thegh hit were fele thousand; on euery side smýtyng vp the host as they wolden in wode raas ferly ouersaiñ hame, al, with wepne rýngýnge, speres and 12 sparthes ruthlyng to-geddre, with cryyng so grysly that noon ende was of helf fañ, as ¹hoft-sithes was wonet to be-fall in ostynges in Irland; of whiche frightnes the most parte of the oste was so aferd, that þay flowe ² and hidden ham, some in wodnes, som in 16 mores. These twey stalward mēñ henten hañ wepene, & lep to hors, and wenten a-noon to Robertes tentes, (Steuenes sone,) and cryed vp-on hañ felowes þat day sholden withstond; and tak hert to hame, and defend ham-self; bot few theñ weñ that so diden, 20 til they saw that this crie and þe noise was all I-left, & nas bot fantasy. Whan the host hem gaddred ayajn to-geddre, thay weñ full soñ ashamet that thay so argly put ham to f[1]ight, and mych speche was amonge ham, and maný, hadden gret enuy, and 24 mych wonder toght of Robert de barñ, that whan the host was in so gret frightnes, he was that mañ þat stydfastly most hym held, and most hym entised for to withstond and fight; and amonge all the goode thewes that in hym weren, þis inamliche is 28 i-told of hym, that for no violence ne ferly aduentur þat hym myght betid, he was neuer whan-hopefully argh, ne aferd; ne amayed of hert, ne shamefully ne didde hym to flight, bot euer moñ he was I-lich redy to weppen and to defend hym-self, and 32 to helpen all oper; he the formost knyght that in this conqueste of Irland first receyued dýnt and hurtýng in battaill. A wonder was of that fantasye: A-morowe whañ hit was day, I the place, ther this folk I-seye smýten vp-on hame, the wedes and the grase 36

A phantom
army at
night
creates
terror
among the
English;

[¹ MS.
host.]

[² MS.
slowe.]

but Meiler
and
de Barri
manfully
withstand
the panic.

Character
of Robert
de Barri.

boldnys mostdele al y-lyke. For Meyler was a mañ that gretly A. D. 1169.
 desyryd' to be Praysid', and that men shold myche Speke of his
 boldnys, and Preysyn hym. / Robert was kyndly, hardy and bold;
 and euer with the fryst in euery fyght / and in euery Perill; but
 he hatyd' nothyng so myche as that a man sholde speke of his nec
 laudis
 exactor,
 nec aurae
 popularis
 aucupator.
 boldnys, ne hym Preyse. / The whyll the hoste was thus in Ossory,
 befell that thay weryn a-nyght y-logid' in an olde castell, and aboute.
 And thus two, as they wer wonyd', weryn in one Plase to-gedderis.
 Fer with-in nyght, come an hoste vp-on ham of so mych Pepill, as A phantom
 host
 they were many thowsandis, on euery syde Smytyng e vp the hoste,
 as they woldyn, in wode raas, fersly ouersayle hame al, wyth wepyn [tanquam
 in impetu
 furoris
 ryngyng e, Speris and sparris rutlyng e to-giddy, wyth cryng e so
 grymly, that none ende was Of elf fare, as ofte-tymes was wonet to sui cuncta
 devoran-
 tium]
 befall in hostyngis in Irland¹. Of whych ferde, the moste Parte of frightens
 the
 English-
 men, who
 run and
 hide;
 the Oste was so a-dred', that they flow and hiddyn ham; somme in
 woddis, some in mores / This two bolde men token har wepyn, and
 lepe to hors, and wentyn anone to Robert Steuenes-sonne, and cried
 on har fellowis that 'they sholdyn wytstond', and take herte to hame,
 and defende ham-Selfe;' but fewe were that so diddyñ, tyll they saw
 that this cry and this noyse was al cessid', and nas but a fantasy. but are
 much
 ashamed
 when they
 find it was
 all fancy.
 whan the host them gaderid' ayeyn to-giddy, they wer ful sore
 asshamyd' that thay so fently Put ham to flyght; and mych Speche
 was amonge hame; and many haddyn gret enuy, and mych wondyr
 thoght of Robert de Barry, that Whan the host was in so gret ferde,
 he was that man that moste stidfastly hym helde, and moste them
 styrrið to wythstonð and fyght. / And amonge al the good' dedis
 that in hym weryn, this Pryncipaly is of hym tolde, that for no
 vyolence ne ferly aduenture that to hym chanssyd', he was neuer in
 wanhope sette, ne agaste, ne aferd', ne abassid' of herte, ne shame-
 fully did hym to flyght; but euer-more he was lyke redy to wepyn,
 and to defend' hym-Selfe, And to helpyn al othyr. he was the
 formyst knyght that, in this conqweste of Irland', fryst receyued' in hac
 Hiberniae
 expugna-
 tione.
 stroke and hurte in bataill // A wondyr was of that fantasy
 a-morrow, whan hit was day: In the Playn ther this Pepill y-seye

¹ Cujusmodi phantasma in Hibernia circa expeditiones frequens esse solebat.
 —Op. v. 235.

A.D. 1169. that stoden al euen vp-right, thay lay all I-drow a-doune and I-cast to grond. [*This grass, &c. only in Harl. MS. 177. Op. v. 236.*]

[CHAPTER VI.]

[*Fol. 4 a.] **A**s this was on this maner I-doñ, the tythynges sprongen in-to al Irland' hwow Macmorgħ conquered his lond' * vpon 4 his men, and' that no man myght hym withstond' for out-comen men that he lade *with* hym. Roryk O'Concowr of Connaght, that was that tȳm kyng of al Irland', vndrestod hȳm, and' toght in his hert the gret peril that myght be-fall hȳm and' al the 8 lond' folk, drogh' the owt-comen folk þat was thus in-to the land' I-coñd; he sent his messagers to al the gret meñ of the lond', and' in a lityll whiñ gaddred ham to-geddre to a parlement, and' tok ham to rede that euery on his half shold' gaddre al the 12 power þat they myght, for to weř vpon Macmorgħ. And as hit was *purueied*, so hit was doñ; Thay assemblet so many hostes and' so mych folk on euery half, that noon end' was, and' comeñ to Okensely for to weren vpon Macmorgħ. Whan this hostes 16 weren thus assemblet, the most parte of Macmorghis meñ, ayeine hař trowth and' ayejn hař othes, some priuely whithdraw hem that day, nold nat to hym com, some al openly leften hȳm, and wenten to his fomen ayeyn hȳnð; so that, in his most nede, trew 20 frendes ne fonde he noñ, sawe Robert, steuenes soñ, and his. *With* the lityll folk that thay hadden, thay wenten in-to a place nat feř frome ffernes, a plejn place bisette about *with* montaignes and woddes, watres and mores, on euery side il to coñd [to]. the 24 entrees that ther weren, by Robert-is deuce thay setten meñ for to stopen, in some place *with* trees I-cast doñ, and' in other places depe diches I-cast. thegh' the place weř stronge of kynde, thay madeñ hit mych stronge[r] *with* engyn, so that hit was 28 I-now seker recet to hañd, and' [to] heř enemȳes ful stronge to coñd to, and *with* litill folke hit myght be I-kept; & derne weies thay hadden *purueied* to hañd-self, owt to goo, ayeyn In to coñd, whan hañd liked. Whane the kyng of Connaght, *with* so many 32 hostes, was to hañd I-coñd, he send to Robert by Messangers, and' present hȳm *with* ryche yiftes, and' many mo he hym be-het, and' fast hȳnð be-soght that, owt of þe Contray, wyche no Right

Roderic O'Conor tries to raise the whole country against Macmurgħ and the English.

Many of Macmurgħ's followers desert him, but Fitzstephen and his men stand by him.

They occupy a strong position not far from Ferns.

smytyn vp-on ham, the wedis and the grasse that stodyn al euyn A D. 1169. vp-ryght, thay lay al y-throw dovne and cast to ground.

[CHAPTER VI.]

As this was thus donne, the thythyngis Spronge Into al *Capitulum* Irland, how Macmurgh conquerid his londe vpon his men, ^{vjm.} and that no man myght hym wythstond; for strange men that he ladd wyth *Hym. Roryke Oconghoure, of Connaght, that was [*Fol. 4a.] that tyme Kynge of al Irland, vndyrstode hym, and thocht in his herte the grete Perel that myght be-fall hym and al the londe- *tam sibi quam patriae ioti.* Pepill, throughe the strangeres that was thus in-to the lande come. He sende his messengeris to al the Lordis of the Londe, and in a lytyll whylle gaddred ham to-gedre to a parlement, and toke ham to consayll, that euery on his Syde sholde gaddyr al the Pepill that thay myght, forto werre vpon Macmurgh. And as hit was Purueyed, so hit was down. Thay assemblid so many Hostis, and so mych Pepill on euery syde, that were vnnowmerabill, and comyn¹ to Okenseley forto werre vp-on Macmurgh / Whan this ^[¹ comyn, MS.] hostis weryn thus assemblet, the moste parte of Macmurgh-ismen, ayeyn hare trowthe and here othis, Some priuely with-drow ham, that they nolde not to hym come. Some al opynly leften hym, and wenten to his ennemys ayeyn hym; so that, in his moste nede, *in necessitatis articulo* trewe frendis ne fownde he none, Sawe Robert Steuenes-Sone and his. wyth the Lytill Pepill that they haddyn, thay wentyn into a place not fare frome Fernys, a pleyne place be-sette aboute with monttans and woddis, wattris and moris², on euery Syde il to come ^{*paludibus.*} to. The entrees that ther weryn, by Robert-is deuyce thay setten men forto stopyn; in some Place with trees y-caste doune, and in othir Placis depe dichis y-caste. thegh the Place were stronge of kynd; thay maddyen hit mych strongir with Engyn, So that hit was sure recette to tham, and to ther ennemys stronge to come to, and with lytill pepill hit myght be kepte. And Erthe-weyes thay haddyn madd to tham-Selfe, out to goo, and ayeyn In to come, *naturalem difficultatem industria plurimum et arte munivit.* when them Plesyd. Whan the kynge of connaght, with so many hostis, was to tham come, he sende to Robert by Messangers, and presentid hym with ryche yeftys, and mych more hym Promysyd; and gretly hym besoght that, out of the contrey, whych no ryght

A. D. 1169. he ne hadde to, ne no chalange ne myght setten vp-on, he and his, with pees and lou[e] shold departe. Mich they spek of this, and litell thay sped. Ther-aftyr, the messagers turned to Macmorgħ, and be-soghten hym on the kynges half, OConghour, 4 that he forth, *with* ham, shold turne vp-on the owt-comeñ folk, ham to slee and vndo. And if he so wold, thay wold delyuer [*Fol. 4b.] hym al leynest, and stidfast pees and frend- *shippe mak hym and, failing haue of the kyng and of all other. Many reisons thay shewed, 8 tries in both for the land & for the land folk; bot notyng they ne spedde, vain to ne noon answar ne hadden, that ham liket. Oconghour saw and Macmurch herd of his Messagers that he myght nat in such maner spede, to turn and that he most with streynt do, that he myght nat with fair 12 against the speche: he tok his wepne grymly, and stod vp a-monge his folk, English. and thus sayd to ham; "Mighty men, and stalward in fight for to defende *your* lond and *your* franchise! vndrestondeth, ayeynd whiche folk, and for what encheson, ye sholl this battail tak an 16 O'Conor addresses his followers, hond: al oure enemy, that afor thus was owt of lond I-dryw for his wykkesse, In *commune* confuson of vs all, al be-tak with owt-comen & wepned folk, is ayaynd *commen* for enuy and harme of vs, & hath I-broght vnked folk vp-on vs, that the harme 20 wich he had no power to don vs hym-self, throgħ helpe of ham & mayntenaunce, the better myght brynge to end; and hath dight hem to sheden his atty so wide, that he rechet nat of his ownd deth, bot that al mowen have our bale troghe hym, and for 24 noon shold be I-spared, and he ne spared hym-self. Ther-for we willen *wit*stond the begynnye, and pe yuel whil hit is comyn, ar hit be Iroted; ffor harme wexet euer *with* longe abiddynge. Our lond & our fredom defended we manly; so that the slaght 28 of pese fewe be ferdnesse to many; & be ensample of these, al other out-lond men to be adrede, such folies to begyn, and the mynd of vs, *with*-out end to rest¹."

[¹ MS. best.]

[CHAPTER VII.]

Macmurch haranges the men of Leinster. **M**acmorgħ, on his halue, be-held his men, and saw ham 32 so amayed: *with* wordes that he myght, he confortd ham on this maner: "Men of leynester, which, sothfast trowth & stidfaste kynd in al aduentures, vs hath felawes I-maked;

he hadd̄ therto, ne no calange ne myght setten vpon, he *and* A. D. 1160.
 his, wyth Pees and loue, sholde deperte. Mych¹ they spoke of [¹Myth,
 this, and lytyll thay Spede / There-aftyr, the messengers turned MS.]
 to Macmurḡh, and be-soghten hym on the kyngis be-halfe, Ocon-
 noghoure, that he forth, wyth tham, sholde turne vpon the strangeres, ut in
 exteras
 nationes
 delendas
 simul cum
 ipsis armis
 conver-
 teret.
 hame to kyll and vndo. And yf he so wolde, thay wolde delyuyr
 hym all leynystere, *and* stydfaste Pees *and* frendshippe make hym
 haue of the kyng and of al othyr. Many reysonys thay shewid̄,
 both for the londe and for the lond-pepill; but nothynḡe thay ne
 spede, ne noone answer̄e hadde, that ham Plesyd̄. Oconnoghore
 saw and herde of his messyngers, that he myght nat in suche
 maner spede, and that he moste *wyth* streynth do that, that he
 myght not *wyth* fayre speche. He toke his wepyn grymly, and
 stode vp amonge his pepill, and thus sayde to tham:—"Myghty
 men, and bolde in fyght forto defende youre londe and youre patriae
 fredome! Vndyrstondyth, ayeynd̄ whych *Pepill, and for whate [*Fo1.4 b.]
 cause, ye sholde this Bataill take on Honde. Al oure ennemy, tutores, et
 libertatis.
 that afor this was out of londe ydrywe for his wickidnes, In
 comynne confusion of vs all, all be-take wyth strangeres and
 wepened Pepyll, is ayeyn comyn, for Enuy and harme of vs, and
 hath broght strange Pepill vp-on vs, that the harme whych he quod,
 cunctis
 communi
 labe in-
 sectis, ut
 nemini
 parcatur,
 nec ipse
 sibi
 pepercit.
 hadde no Powere to don vs hym-selfe, through helpe of them and
 mayntenavnce, the bettyr myght brynḡe to ende; and hath dyght
 hym to shedyn his wenym so wyde, that he takyth no fors to dye, exterae
 nationes
 ab ausu
 tam
 nefario
 imper-
 petuum
 abstru-
 antur.
 but that we al mow haue oure [e]will throḡh hym, and for none
 sholde be Sparyd̄, and he ne Sparyth hym-Selfe. There-for we will
 wy[th]stonde the begynnynge, and the Perel whyle hit is comyn, are
 hit be rotyd̄. For harme wexeth euer wyth longe abydynḡe. Oure
 londe and oure fredome, defende we manly; So that the slaght
 of this fewe be ferde to many; and by Ensampill of thes, al othyr
 strangers sholde be aferde, suche folies to begynne, And the mynde
 of vs, wyth-oute ende to abyde."

[CHAPTER VII.]

MAcmurḡh / on his syde, be-held his men, *and* Sawe hame Capitulum
 vij^m.
 sore a-bassyd̄. *wyth* wordis that he myght, he confortid̄
 ham on this manere: "Men of leynyster, wych, trusty trouth and
 stydfaste kynde in al aduentures, vs hath fellowis y-made, wyth- comites
 indivisos

A. D. 1169. *without* any partyng, a-reſ we ouſ hertes, styfly vs-self to defend.
 The maistre of wreth and of Coueytise, that *with* streynth wold
 vs brynge vnderfoot, and ous ayeyn dryue out of lond, otheſ, that
 Let us defend ourselves !
 wors is, in the same lond, vs tynken vndo: that god shild ! loo, heſ 4
 is I-coſ vpon ouſ heſ, of his myſh gaderynge of folke prowſ &
 hautejn. be ye well vndrestond, þat nat trogh gret tale of men
 [*Fol. 5 a.]
 ne trogh greth streynth, both drogh *right and trowth that maſ
 Right, not numbers, win battles.
 hath *with* hym, battailles doth ouercoſ. We haue for vs, ayeyn 8
 har pryde, mekenes ; ayayns har vnrýght, right and trowth ; ayeyn
 har boldenese and ouer-truste, mekenese and maner. Thay
 fighten for coueytise, for to get good ; and we, for to flee harme.
 with al this we bene in stronge place and wel I-warned. The moſ 12
 that heſ commeth, the more encombrement we shall do hame, by
 Be of one heart, and fight !
 lityll folk ham to ouercoſ, so that we be of on hert, and stily
 withstond.'

[CHAPTER VIII.]

Fitz-
 stephen
 makes a
 speche to
 the
 English-
 men.

Whan Macmorghe had his tale I-endeth in his speche, 16
 Robert Steuenes-soſ, spake to his felaws and to his
 meigne on this wise: "fightynge fors, & yongelynges I-corne,
 that so many perilles hawe to-gedde I-soffred, and euer in al
 adventures, and of heigh hert ibe ! If we inly vndrestonde wiche 20
 meſ we ben, *with* what lodes-maſ, and for what thynge we this per-
 ille vndre-tok *with* stalwardnesse, as ouſ [wone]ys, we shullen ouer-
 come ; & the grace that ye I-haue i-hadde ar this of god, ne shal vs
 nat forlete. Of the folke of Troy we ben kyndlych y-come, on þat 24
 oon half, fro þe first begynnyge ; of ffrance, we haue kynde on
 otheſ half. Throgh kynd of Troy, we owe to be hardy ; throgh
 kynd of ffrance, we ben vsed in wepene ; & so as we bene of double
 mane kyndly, of good herth & well y-wepned, & well y-lernet yn 28
 wepne, ne dout no man, þat such vnwepned rascayll any power
 haw ous to wythstond : on that otheſ halue, we come nat yn-to
 thys land as hyryng men, ne for no couetyse of gold, ne of syluyſ,
 ne galyotz ne robbers ; bott for to helpe thys heyth man that ys so 32
 noble & so fre, &, progh hys owne men, lodderly was of lond
 y-dryue. we hawe reuth of bys harm ; & helpeth vp þat adoun was
 y-brozthe ; to hys kynd sted, bryngeth hym þat vnkyndly was

From
 Troy we
 get bold-
 ness ;
 from
 France,
 skill in
 fight.
 We come
 not for
 hire, or as
 pirates,
 but to
 help a
 noble man
 unjustly
 treated.

out eny partynge, arrere we vp oure hertes, boldely vs to defende. A. D. 1169.
 The maystyr of wreth *and* of couetyse, that wyth streynth wolde ¹ the
 vs brynge vndyrfote, and vs ayeyn dryue out of londe, Othir, that oration
 wors is, in the same londe Purposyth vs to vndo / that god [in a later
 forbedde / be-holde, here is come vp-on oure hedd, of his mych hand].
 gadrynge of pepill Proute and hauteyn. be ye wel vndyrstond, quod
 that not wyth many men, ne wyth grete Streynth, bot by ryght absit
and trouth that man hath wyth hym, batalis doth ouercome. We
 haue for vs, ayeyn har pryde, mekenys; ayeynes hare vnryght, ryght
and trouth; ayeyn har boldnys *and* ouer-truste, mekenesse *and* modus et
 maner. thay fyghtyn for couetyse, forto gete good; And we, to modestia.
 shonne myschefe. wyth all this, we byth in stronge Place, and well tam arte
 warnyd. The more that here comyth, the more encembrement quam
 we shal do ham, by lytill folke ham to ouercome, So that we be of natura
 oñe herte, *and* styfly wystone.” munitissimum.

[CHAPTER VIII.]

WHEN Macmurgh hadd his tale y-edynd in his speche, Capitulum
 Roberte Steuenes-Sofie spake to his fellowys, *and* to them viiij^m.
 in this maner Sayde: “Fyghten feris, *and* yonglynges y-know, that Bellorum
 so many Perelis haue to-geddyr Sofferid; and euer in al aduentures, socii,
 and of hey hert ben! If we Inwardly wndyrstonde what men we adole-
 ben; wyth what lodes-man, *and* for what thyng, we this Perel scentes
 vndirtoke; *with* boldnys, as we were wonyd; we shall ouercome; and electi.
 the grace that we haue hadd ar this of god, ne shall vs not forsake.
 // Of* the folke of Troy we Ben Kynly come, on that one syde, fro [*Fol. 5 a.]
 the fryste begyn[i]nge; of Fraunce, we haue kynde on the othyr
 halfe. Throgh the kynde of troy, we sholde be bolde; throgh
 kynde of Fraunce, we ben wysd in wepynd; and so as we ben of
 doubil maner kyndly, of good herte *and* wel wepenyd, and wel
 lernyd in wepyñ,—ne dout no man, that Suche vnwepenyd rascaill populum
 any Powere haue to vs to wyth-sonde. One that ouer syde, we inermem.
 come not into this londe as wagicd men, ne for no couetyse of
 golde, ne of Syluyr, ne of galiotz, ne robbers; but forto helpe Non ergo
 this goode man that is so nobill and so fre, and, wyth his owyn piratae,
 men, wickydly was out of his londe drywe. We haue Pite of his non prae-
 harme; and helpyth vp that adouñ was caste / to his kynde state, dones huc
 aduenimus.

A. D. 1169.
He has
given us
land.
[MS.
ouer.]

We'll win
the battle
and glory.

theſe-of I-banſheth. And he, as largh mañ & goodſ prynce, hat
vs yeueñ wyde londes & ryche townes, & owſ lond folke wyll
ſetten & planten ſtydfaſtly yn þys lond, nowe & euer¹. Therfor,
men, full [of] ſtreynth & ſtalwarthnes, ſuch thyng y-magyneth 4
to-day hartly to do, that owſ kynred ne go nat out of kyndſ,
& yn thys, lyuynge oþer dey, we manly wyñ the pryce, that
euer more torne to whyrshyppe vs & al ouſ that aftyſ ws ſhullen
come.”

8

[CHAPTER IX.]

O'Conor,
doubtful of
the iſſue,
makes
terms with
Mac-
murgh,

[*Fol.5b.]

who, it is
agreed,
ſhall hold
from
Roderic,
and give
him his
ſon as a
hoſtage.

Wythe theſe wordes, & otheſe ſuche, theſe heghe meñ
comforted haſ folk, for day ſchuldeñ hawe the bettyr wyll
well for to fyght. And whañ day were oñ euery half redy for to
ſmyth to-geddre, OConozwýr, be-thozghthýng that the aduentuſ 12
of battaylle ben ofte doutouſe & myche vncerteine, And as the
whysmañ ſeythe ‘all tynge me ſhall aſſay, rather than fyght,’
& all-ſo he & hys doutendeñ well ſore to aſſemble with folke
I-wepned; On al maner that he myzght, * He was abowte thame 16
ſholde make peas. thane, throgħ beſechyng of goode menñ
that went betwene, & throgħ grace of the holy goſte, was
the peas y-made, oñ þis maner; that thay ſholde leve leynester
to Maccmorghowe, & he ſholde hitt holde of Oconoghouſ, & 20
hym knowlech, & ſuget be to hym as to a kyng & prynce
of Irland. And þat thys ſhold be ſtydfaſtly I-hold, Macmorgh
bytok hym hys ſone to aſtage, by ſo, þat yf he good pees hold,
& trewly hym helde, Oconghuſ ſhold hym yeue hys doghter to 24
wyff. Whañ thys was comynly I-ſhewed & I-knowe, & otheſe
I-ſhwerne oñ euery half, all thys trewly to hold, Another thyng
was beſpoke bytween ham, bott þat preuely, that Macmorgh ne
ſhold nomore bryng vnked mon yn-to the lond, & thay that 28
he hade y-brought, as rathe as he had leynestre yn good pees,
he ſhold anon ſend ayenne home, & delyueryd þe lond of ham.

[CHAPTER X.]

Maurice
Fitzgerald
now
arrives,
with a fol-
lowing, at
Wexford.

Aftyſ that þe pees was thys Imaket, þe hoſt departed,
euery oñ hys half. Sone þer-after come Moryce, Geraudes 32
ſoñ, Robertes brotheſ, of whom we ſpokeñ ar thys, wyth .x. knyghtes
& .xxx. Squyres & ij houndred footmen, & ar[y]ued at weyſford;

bryngyth hym that vnkyndely was therof y-banshet. And he, A. D. 1169.
 as large man and good Prince, bath vs yevyð wyde landis and gentem hic nostram in insula plantare. seu vincendo seu moriulo perpetuum nobis gloriam strenuitate comparenus.
 ryche townes; and oure londe-pepill will setten and Planted
 stydfastly in this londe, nowe and euer. Therfor, men full of
 streynth and of boldnes, Suche thyng ymagyneth to-day hertely
 to do, that oure kynred ne go not oute of kynde; and in this,
 lywe or dye, we manly wynn the Pryce, that euer-more shall
 tour[n]e to oure wyrchippe, and to al oure that aftyr vs schalle
 come."

[CHAPTER IX.]

Wyth this wordis, and othyr Suche, thes good men confortyd
 here Pepill, for thay sholdyn haue the bettyr wyll, well Capitulum ix^m.
 forto fyght. And when thay were on euery halfe redy forto smyte
 to-geddre, Oconghoure bethoght hym that the aduenture of bataill
 ben ofte doutfull and mych vncertayn. An[d], as the Wysman Ter. Eum. IV. vii. 19.
 Seyth, "Althyng we oghte to assay, radyr than fyght" / And also
 he and his douteden well sore to fyght wyth Pepill wepenyd. On al
 maner that he myght, he was besy to haue Pees. Then, by the
 besechyng of good men that wente betwene, and throgh grace of
 the holy goste, was the Pees mad on this maner; that thay sholde
 leue leynystere to Macmurgh, and he sholde hite holde of Ocon-
 ghoure, and hym knowlech, and Subiecte be to hym as to a kyng
 and Prynce of Irland. And that this sholde be stydfastly holde,
 Macmurgh toke hym his sone to hostage, by So, yf he good Pees filium suum Cnu-churum.
 helde, and trewely hym helde, Oconghoure sholde hym yeue his
 doghter to wyfe. whan this was comynly shewyd and know, and
 othis sworð on euery Syde, al this trewely to kepe, Anothyr thyng
 was spokyn be-twen them, bothe that Pryuely, that Macmurgh ne
 sholde no more strangeres bryng into the londe; And thay that
 he hadd broght, as Sone as he hadd leynystere in good Pees, he statim remitteret.
 shold Sende them home, and delyuere the londe of hame.

[CHAPTER X.]

Aftyr that the Pees was thus made, the hoste departyd; on Capitulum x^m.
 his halue. Sone there-aftyr come Morice, Geraudis Sonne *, [*Fo1.5b.]
 Robert-is Brodyr, of whom we Spokyn ar this, Wyth x Knyghtis
 and xxx^{ti} Squyeris, and two hundred fotemen, and londid at

A. D. 1169. A man full queynt, trow trogh̄ al thyngē, & stalwarth, & stydfast of word, & of hert symple, & shamffast as a mayd. Wañ *Macmorgh* & Robert hyt wysten, thay weren ful glad, & boldeñ þan thay before were : thay come to ham sone wyth þe oste þat thay had. 4

Macmorgh be-thoght h̄m̄ of the mych vnyght that þe men of deuelýnḡ h̄m̄ hadden done, & hys fadeñ all-so, many sithe : he assembled h̄s hostes, & redied hym to wend thedere. Boot Robert byleft *wit̄* somdell of þe mejne, fore to rere hym a castell 8 at a place that me clepeth þe karryke, & ys twey myle out of weysford ; & Moryce went wyth h̄m̄. *Macmorgh*, as mayster & leder of the host, & cheuetayn of al. In lytell whyle, all þe contreys about dyuelyn, wyth robyngē & bernyng & sleýng, 12 weren¹ neght I-broght to noght. The sitezeýns of dyuylyn, whan thay thys wysten, thay sentten to ham, & besoghten pees, & yaue ham so mych gold & syluer that non end was at har wylle, & good ostages, & othes I-[s]wore that þay sholden to *Macmorgh* 16 trew be, & h̄m̄ knowleche þan-forward as lord & prynce. Fro that tyme that thys was y-do, ther was noon Iryshman yn leynnesteñ, of hey kyne ne of low, that for seruesse² of englyssemen ne yeldet hym to *Macmorgh*, so þat þer was noght of þe 20 lond̄-folke þat all nas subyett to hym, & redy to hys wylle.

[¹ MS. wepen.]

The citizens submit and acknowledge *Macmorgh* as their lord. [² for ferdenesse?]

[CHAPTER XI.]

O'Conor makes war on O'Brien of Limerick and sends Fitzstephen and Maurice to oppose him. O'Conor is defeated, and O'Brien becomes independent of him.

IN thys whyle, wax a grett wreth & a grete stryfe betwyx þe kynḡ of Connaght, & donoll Obreyñ, þe kyng [of] lymeryke, & of thomond. the kyng of connaght, Oconoghur̄, gaddered̄ hys 24 hostes for to wer̄ vpon Obreen. Obreen sent *to mamorrowz, for allyaunce that was betwen ham, that he shold hym helpe. he spake þer-of to Robert & to Moryce, & bad ham that þay shold̄ go theder for to helpe Obreen. Thay name har meñ wyth ham, & wenten 28 ynto thomond̄, and ffondeñ Oconoghur̄, that stryffly stode ayeyñ ham, & many fyghtes ham yaue. Bot the dysconfitur̄ turned vpon Oconoghur̄, & many of hys meñ wer I-sleyñ, so that wythe shame he most turne ayeyñ ynto Connaght. And fro that tym, Obreen 32 wythdrow hym from̄ Oconoghur̄, & neuer after was subyect to h̄m̄ as he was thar-by-fore ; & the englysh hoste, wyth grett gettynges & *wit̄* rych yiftes, turned ayeyne yñ-to leynestre.

weysford. A man full quent, trew throw al thyng, bolde, and stydfaste of word, *and* of hert sympil, and shamefaste as a mayd // Whan *Macmurgh* *and* Robert hadd' wyttynge of Morice-is comynge, they weryn full glad, and boldyr than thay before were. thay came to tham Sone wyth the hoste that thay hadde / *Macmurgh* bethoght hym of the mych wronge that the men of Deuelyn to hym hawdyn done, and his fadyr also, many tymys : he assemblid' his hostes, *and* made hym redy thedyr forto goo. But Robert lefte wyth some of the meynge forto rere hym a castel at a Place that is callid' the Karryke, and is two myle out of weysford; And Morice went wyth hym. *Macmurgh* as gouernoure and ledere of the hoste and capytan of all. In lytell Processe of tyme, al the contreis about deuelyn, wyth Robynge and brennyng *and* kyllynge of pepill, weryn al-meste broght to nocht // The Citseynys of deuelyn, whan thay of this had wyttynge, thay Sendyn besoght Pees, and yaue hame so myche golde and Siluyr that none ende was at har will, and good hostagis, *and* othis Sworne that thay Sholdyn to *Macmurgh* be trewe, *and* hym knowlege as lord and Prynce. Fro that tyme that this was done / ther was none Irysh-man in leynystre, of hey kyn ne of low, but that, for fere of Englysh-men, thay yaue hame to *Macmurgh*, So that ther was none of the londe-pepill, that al nas subiecte to hym, and redy to his wille /

[CHAPTER XI.]

IN this tyme, rose grete debate and wrete be-twyxe the kyng of Connaght, and Donalde Obreyn, the kyng of Ilymerike, and of thomonde. the kyng of Connaght, Oconghoure, gaderid' his hostes forto werre vp-on obreyn. Obreyn Sende to *Macmurgh*, for allyaunce that was betwen ham, that he sholde hym helpe. He Spake therof to Robert *and* to Morice, *and* bade them that th[a]y sholde go thedyr forto helpe obreyn. Thay, and har men wyth hame, *and* wentyn Into thomonde, and' foundyn oconghoure, that styfly stode a-yennes hame, *and* many fighes hame yaue. But the dis-comfyture turned vp-on oconghoure; *and* many of his men were sleyn, So that wyth shame he mvste tvrne into connaght. / And fro that tyme, Obreyn wythdrowe hym from oconghoure, and neuer aftyr was subiecte to hym as he was ther-to-forn. And the Englysh hoste, wyth grete gettynges *and* wyth ryche yftis, turned' ayen Into Leynystre.

A.D. 1169.

graves
Dubli-
nensium
injurias.ad exter-
minium
fere
reducto.Capitulum
xj^m.
[Fol. 6 a.]post
varios
conflictus
ubique
victoria
potitus.

[CHAPTER XII.]

A. D. 1169.
Maemurgh
aspires to
be king of
all Ireland.

Macmoroꝝwꝝch sawe the englysshe-men so stalwarth that no power myght ham wythstond. he bethoght hym of thyng that was passed, & that sume of hys eldre to-fore hym hadden somtyme the kyngedome of all Irland, & that al the lond was subyet to hym : he wold, by hys myght, by ryght of hys eldreñ, brynge hyt yn-to the self state, that al þe lond shold be vnder hys lordshyppe, as hyt was wndre hys eldreñ to-fore hys tȳm. Of þys tȳngē he spak preuely wyth Robert, & wyth Moryce, & besoght har consayll therof; And þay hym answerd, & seiden, that 'lyghtly that myght be done, yf he wold make come more plente of englyssh meñ ynto þe lond.' he bad ham well porwe, that thay sholden yn al manere senden after more of har kyñ & frendshype. & for thay shold' the bettyre wyll haue ther-to, he profred ham to yeue hys eldest doghtre to on of ham, whych hyre so wold, wyth all hys lond aftyr hys day. bot, fore euery of ham had wyf & I-spoused that tyme, after mych spech, & many dalyaunce ther-of at thys consaylle, thay thoght þat he, to the erle Rychard, (of whom we haue ar thys I-spoke, & to whom he behete the same doghter ther-to-fore at Brystowe,) hys lettres shold send on thys maner : "**¶** Dermot Maemorgh, priynce of leynestre, to Rychard, Gylbertes soñ, erle of strugoꝝl, sendeth grettyng. If þou rekenest the tyme that ys Igoo, as well as we that nede haue, ouꝝ mone nys ycome to þe no rather than hys tyme. Storke & swalewes, & oþer somer foules, we haue aftyre I-loked : thay comen, & wyth þe cold north-westre wynd þay ben away ywent. Bot thy comynge, that we so mych haue desyred & so longe I-loked after, nether estren wyn[d]e, ne noon other, vs ne hath I-send, as thou vs be-hete. þerfor, that thou hast y-dene troght some grete lette, hastylly be about to do; for that weꝝ al ouꝝ gladnes, that thou hast swyth. If þou stalwardly comest, & wyth good myght, the four partyes of Irland shal sone be turned to þe fyft." Whan the erle had thys I-hard, he was yn many thoughtes; & aftyr many selcouth * & dyuers redes, at the last he bethoght hym, that so fewe meñ as weren yn-to the lond I-come ther-to-fore, hadden yñ so lytyll whyll so well I-sped of har aduentures : he name to hym the better herte, & thyng

Fitz-
stephen
and
Maurice,
whom he
consults,
advise him
to bring
over more
English-
men.

He sends a
letter to
Earl
Richard
urging him
to come
over.

[*Fol.6b.]

[CHAPTER XII.]

A. D. 1169.

MAcmurgh sawe the Englysh-men so bolde, that no man myght ham wythstond. he be-thoght hym of thyngge that was passyd; and that some of his eldryn to-fore hym haddyn some tyme the kyngedome of al Irland; and that al the land was subiecte to hym. he wolde, by his myght / by ryght of eldryn, bryngge hit Into the same state, that al the londe sholde be vndyr his lordshipe, as hit was * Vndyr His eldryn to-fore His tyme. Of this thyngge He Spake wyth Robert and wyth Moryce, and be-soghte har consayle vp-on this. And thay hym answerid, and sayd, that 'lyghtly that myght be done, yf he wolde make come more Plente of Englysh-men into the londe.' He Prayed ham, that in al haste thay sholde sende aftyr more of hare kyn and hare frendis. and for thay sholde haue the bettyr will therto, he profered hame to yeue his eldyst doghtyr to one of ham, whych hyr so wolde, with al the londe aftyr his day. but, for euery of hame hadd wyfe, and spoused that tyme, Aftyr mych spech, and many delyaunce therof at this consayle, thay thoght that he, to the erle richard' (of whom we haue ar this spoke, and to whom he promysyd the same doghtyr there-to-for at Brystowe,) his letteres sholde sende on this manere // " Dermot Macmurgh, Prince of leynstere, to Richard; Gylbertes sone, Erle of strugoil, sendyth gretynge. If ye haue rekenyd the tyme that is I-goo, as wel as we that nede haue, oure compleynte is not come to yow no radyr than this tyme. Storkys and swalewes, and othyr Somyr fowlis, we haue aftyr a-waytid: thay comyn; and with the colde north weste wynde thay ben away I-went. But youre comynge, that we so mych haue desyrid and so longe lokid aftyr, nethyr estryn wynd; ne none othyr, vs ne hath sende, as ye vs promysid. Ther-for [as] ye ne haue this doñe but through some grete lette, hastely be a-but to do; for that were al oure gladnys, that ye haste blywe. Yf ye boldely come, and wyth good streynth, the foure Parties of Irland' shal sone be turned to the fyfte" // Whan the Erle hadd this hard, he was in many thoughtis; and aftyr many and dyuers thoughtes, at the laste he be-thoght hym, that so few men as weryn into the londe y-come ther-to-fore, haddyn in so lytill tyme so wel y-spede of har aduentures: he hade the bettyr herte, and thyngge that he dowtted

Capitulum
xij^m.*ad avita et
antiqua
jura.*

[*Fol. 6 b.]

*hoc facile
feri posse.**legitime
copula
gaudebat
uterque.*Ovid, *Ep.*
*Her. ii. 7.**circio jam
flante nec
favonius
nec eurus.**de facili
conver-
tentur*

A. D.
1169-70.
The Earl
resolves
on the
enterprise.

that he doutēd myche theſe-by-fore to begyne, he wax tho the bolder to tak an hond. Fro that tyme, al hys thoght & all hys wyllē was, nyghte & day, wyth all hys myzth to wend in-to Irland. He went hym to be kyngē henry, & hym swith be-soght þat he shold⁴ delyuer hym hys londes þat sholden be hys by ryght of herytage, other yeue hym leue to do hym yn adventuſ, lond to purchace ynd vnked land.

A. D. 1170.

[CHAPTER XIII.]

He sends
Reymond
le Gros to
Ireland,
who lands
near
Waterford,
ab. May 1,
1170.

Whan the Kyngē wyst hys entent, whoder he wold go, he ne yaue hym fully leue, ne fully hym ne warned; bot wyth such leue as he had, he dight hym þe wynter tyll the begynny[n]ge of Maye. He sent to-for hym ynto Irland A knyght that was I-called Reymond le gras;—wyth hym, x knyghtes, & 12 fourty Squyers, & four score bowmen;—A man ful hardy & stalwarde, & well proued ynd wepne, Robertis neuē, & Moryces, har eldest brother, sone. Thay arryued at a place i-called dundoneuile, four myle a south halfe Waterford; & ther thay arered 16 a dyche, & a feble castel vpon, of yardes and turues¹. The men of Watterford, & wyth ham Malaghelynd of olan, thys wāren I-ware that thay y-hadden such neghborhede ful loth, & toke ham to rede, þat þay wolden vpon ham, ar mo com to ham. Thay 20 assembled ham togeddre, well thre thousand men, & wentēd ouer the wattyſ of sur, that parteth the twey contres of leynestre & of mounestre, & setten ham ynd thre hostes, ful boldely for to assaylle the englysshe-men *with*-In har castell. Reymond & hys 24 men—thogh they fewe wer, they wē nat feynt—*with* vneuenly host wentēd out & assembled wyth ham. Bot, as no wonder was, so few men ne myght nat all priuely fyghten aye ynd so many, thay turned ham aye to har recet. the other wenedēd that thay 28 departed yn dyscomfyte; thay braken har sheld. In, & wentēd aftyr: & thay war nat fully wythynd þe yate, that some of ham nē rather In thānd þe englyssh. Reymond saw that he & hys were ynd gret perylle, & vpon poynt to lese the lyfe. he be-cryed 32 hys felewes, & turned stalwarthly vpon her formē²; & þe fyrste that come ynd, he claue hym the heed, & through slaight of that

He is
attackt
by the
Waterford
men and
O'Phelan,

and is
forced to
retreat to
his camp.

¹ MS. iurues, or inrues.

² men in front.

mych ther-be-for to begyn, he wax than the boldyr to take an honde. Fro that tyme, al his thoght and al his will was, nyght and day, wyth al his myght to wende into Irland. He went then to the kynge, and besoght hym that he shold delyuere hym his londis that sholdyn be his by ryght of heritage, othyr yeue hym leue to do hym in aduenture, londe for to Purchase in vnkyd land.

A. D.
1169-70.
*vel in
exteris
regionibus
se fatis et
fortunae
commit-
tendi
licentiam
daret.*

[CHAPTER XIII.]

A. D. 1170.

Whan the kynge vndyrstode his entente, whedyr he wolde goo, he yaue hym not full leue, ne fully be-name hym not; but *with* suche leue as he hadd; he dight hym the wyntyr till the begynnyng of may / he Sende to-for hym into Irland a knyght that was callid¹ Reymond Legras;—wyth hym, x knyghtis and fourty Squyeris, and foure score bowmen;—A man ful hardy and bolde and wel proued in wepyn, Robert-is eme², and Morices, hare eldyts brodyr, sone. Thay londyd at a place that is y-callid Dundonenyld, foure Mile on the Sowth syde of watyrford; and there they rerid a dyche, and a febill castel vpon, of Iardis and turues*. The men of Watyrford, and wyth ham Malaghelyn Of olan, this waryn y-ware that thay haddyn such neghboris, that ham were loth³; and toke ham to consayle, that thay wolde vp-on ham, ar mo come to hame. Thay gaderid ham to-gaddyr, wel iij^e. M. men, and wentyn ouer the watyr of Sure, that partyth the two contreis, that is to Say leynystre and mounestre, And settyn ham in thre hostis, ful boldely forto assayle the Englysh-men *with*-In har castel. Reymond and his men (thegh thay fewe were, they were not feynte) *with* few pepill wentyn out, and mete *with* hame. But, as no woundyr hit was, so few men myght not al plenary fyghten ayeyn so many, that turned ham to thare recette. the othyr wende that thay depertid in descomfite; thay brakyn har sheldrun, and wentyn aftyr. and thay were not fully wythin the gate, that some of hame nere radyr In than the English. Reymond saw that he and his were in grete Perail, and on Poynte to lese here lyfe. he cried on his fellowis, and tvrned boldely vp-on here enemys. and the fryst that come In, he clewe his hede. and through deth of that o man, al the

Capitulum
xiiij^m.
*quasi
licentia,
ironica
namque
magis
quam
vera.*
[² eme,
uncle, is
'nephew'
in this
MS.]
[*Fol.6b.]
*ex virgis
et cespite.*

*de plano
resistere
non potuit.*
*intra
valvas
viz plene
suspensas
certatim
intrando
susce-
perunt.*

¹ R. Legras.³ Exterorum viciniam suspectam habentes, v. 24S.

A. D. 1170. mañ, all the ost was dyscomfyte, & tok hañ to flyght. The
oper ham folwed yñ-to all þe pleyñ, & leyd hañ oñ so, þat yñ
He turns on his assailants, and repels them with heavy loss. lytell whýll thay slowe of hañ fyfe¹ hundred & mo; & þe most
parte of þe other felleñ adon yñ-to þe see, of þe heye rokes, & 4
drent hañ-selfe. In thys fyght, was a knyght that hete Wyllyam
ferand, that dydde ouer-wett & aboue all other: he was a mañ
that hade semblant as thocht he weñ oñ the mich yuell, & þer-foñ
[* Leaf 7.] he put hym-selue² alwey ther * the most perille was; ffor he ne 8
William Ferand shows special bravery. raght thegh deth come betwene hym & hys yuell, ar hyt wañ to
mych I-smýt vpon hym. Heñ þe pryð of waterford felle; heñ
all hys myght went to noght; heñ-of come the Englysshe hope
& comfort; & to the Iresshe, dred & wanhope; ffor hýt was neuer 12
ther-to-for I-herd, that of so fewe men, so grett a slaght was done.
Bot lyder consaylle thay dydden þer-after, that turned ham to
mych cruelte; ffor whañ the maystrý was al har, & al har fomeñ
ouercome, In þe fyght wereñ ytake well thre score meñ & teñ, 16
that ham yolden, & wereñ the heghest & the rychyst of al the sitè,
such þat þay myght haue had for ham the sitè delyuered, or els
Seventy men were taken prisoners; and it is debated what to do with them. as myche catel as thay wolden desyr. Heruy of Mountnorthy,
that to hañ was ycome, hym thrydsome of knyghtes, & Reymond, 20
vp dyuers domes strouen what meñ shold do wyth har prysons³;
ffor Reymond trauayllet about for to dilyuere hañ, as a mañ of
reuthful mode, & þus seyð to hys feres: "lordynges, what ys vs
to done of our wreched prisoners? I sey nat that man⁴ shal on 24
Reymond tries to save them; any maner spar hys fomañ; bot thay beth nat now fomen, both⁵
beth meñ nat rebelle, bot yñ bataylle for to defend⁶ har contrey
ouercome. Me thynketh thay beth now yñ such state, that me
oght bettyr haw mercy of hañ & yeve hañ lyfe, for to yeue other⁷ 28
ensample to be boxom, than cruely to do hañ to deth, whar-
throgħ þat other, throgħ ferdnesse of trust, þe lasse to yeld hañ
to vs." Whañ Reymond had such wordes I-seyde, yn al þe folke
but Hervey was moste wi[ll]e⁷ to graunt ham lyf, Arose vp Heruy amonge 32
opposes him.

¹ MS. lyfe.² MS. sleue.³ pryson = prisoner.⁴ MS. maner.⁵ but: Sed hi non hostes jam, sed homines.—*Op.* v. 250.⁶ MS. defond.⁷ The ink has perisht: 'et murmure populi cum quodam quasi favore subsecuto.' *Gir. Camb., Exp. Hib.* c. xv.—*Op.* v. 252, Rolls Series.

hoste was dys-comfite *and* toke ham to flyght / The othyr ham A. D. 1170.
 folwid' into al the Playñ, and leyde on ham. So that in lytyl
 space of tyme thay kyllid' of ham v. C. *and* mo; and the most ab altis in
 Parte of the othyr fellyn adovñ into the see, of the hey Rokys, mare rupi-
 and dreynt ham-selfe // In this fyght was a knyght that was bis prae-
 callid' William ferrand, that did ful wel *and* abowe al othyr; cipitati
sunt
infiniti.
¹he was a man that hade semblant as thegh he were on the
 mych yuel; and therfor he Putte hym-Selfe at tymys ther the
 moste Peryl was. For he roght not thegh dethe come betwen
 hym and his Sekenys, or hit were mych grow on hym¹ /
 Here the Pryde of Watyrforde felle; here al his myght went to superbia
 noght; her-of come the Englysh hope and conford'; and to the cecidit.
 Irysh, dred and wanhope. For hit was neuer ther-to-fore herde horror . .
 that, of So few men, so grete a slaghte was done. But a lewid desperatio.
 consayle thay diddyn, that ther-aftyr turned ham to myche
 cruelte. For whan the Mastry was al hare, *and* al hare enemys
 ouercome, In the fyght weryn take wel iije score men *and* teñ that septua-
 ham yeldyn, *and* weryn the beste and the rycheste of the Cite, ginta cives.
 Such that thay myght haue hade for them the Cite delyuerid; or
 els as mych ryches as thay wolde desyre. Heruey of montmurthy, pecuniam
 that to ham was come, hym thyrdsome of knyghtis, *and* Reymond; infitam.
 vp-on dyuers consaylis thoghten what thay sholde do wyth har
 Prysoneris. For Reymond laborid' for thar delyverance, as man
 of pitefull herte / *And* thus sayd to his fellowis: "Lordynges, what
 is vs to done wythoure wrechid' presoners? I Sey not that man de captivis
 shal on any maner spare his enemys; but thay byth nat now nostris.
 enemys; but byth men not rebell, but in bataill forto defende
 har contrey ouercome. Me-thynkyth thay byth now in such state,
 that we owyth bettyr haue mercy of ham *and* yeue ham lyfe, forto potius . .
 yeue othyr ensampill to be boxume, than cruely to do ham to pietas ad
 deth; wher-for otheris wil truste the lasse to yelde ham to vs." exemplum,
 *Whan Reymond' Hade Suche Wordys y-Seyde, and al the fello- quam cru-
 shippe Was most about to graunt ham lyfe, Aros vp heruey ney delitas ad
[*Fol.7 a.] tormentum.

¹⁻¹ vir carne quidem infirmus, sed corde firmissimus: imminetem, ut videbatur, leprae malitiam morte nimirum praevenire desiderans tam praeinatura quam praeclara.—*Op.* v. 249.

A. D. 1170. hame al, & thys ham̄ seyð: "Inogh̄ Reymond openly to vs hath
 'Enough of Mercy!' spoke of *mercy* & almes-dedes, vnked landes I-wonne, & nat wyth
 Did slagh̄ & wyth brenny[n]ge. Wheder̄ Alexander̄ & Iulius Cesar,
 Alexander and Caesar that wereñ lordes of al þe world; wonnen londes by such wey, 4
 win by it? I wold Reymond wold me answer. Whan thay comeñ to vs vel
 arrayede to fyghteñ, If þay hadde I-won ouer-hand & vs ouercome,
 wolden thay, for almesse & for reuth, haw had *mercy* of vs? nay,
 I trow nat. þerfor out-chese oñ of two: Otheṛ do manly thynges, 8
 wher̄fore we bene ycome; & the folke þat ys rebbeñ ayeyn vs,
 wyth-outten any noyse, wyth wepne hertely brynges out of dawes;
 Other, yf we shollen̄ do almes dede on hem̄, & ham̄ spareñ, as
 Reymond hath seyð, out we wend to ouṛ shyppes, & turne ayeyn, 12
 & let we the wreched men hold har lond, & brouken wythouten
 any chalange." Heruyes dome lyket *better* than Reymondes; &
 weren the Cytezeyns to deth Idemed. Thay ne hadden no wone
 of warytres; & þerfor þey ladden ham̄ to þe clyf of þe see, & put 16
 ham̄ adoun, & drent ham.

Either kill
the rebels
quietly,

or go
home!

As no
gallows are
handy, the
rebels are
drownd.

[CHAPTER XIV.]

Earl
Richard
Struguil

[*Fol.7b.]

lands at
Waterford,
Aug. 23,
fulfilling
prophecies
of Merlin
and the
Irish Saint
Moling.

Reimund
joins him.
They
assault
Waterford,
Tuesday,
Aug. 25.

The men-tyme, the Erl *Rychard*, wyth the power̄ that he
 had arayed, was y-come to south wales; & whañ he hadde
 wyth * gret reuerence y-done hys pylrimage at sent dauyes, he put 20
 hym to saylle, & hade good wynd, came ynto Irland *with* two
 hundret knyghtes & otheṛ, moṛ than a thousand. He arryued at
 weyseford on seynt Bertylmewes eueñ: Than was fulfýlled a
 prophecye that Merlyñ seyð of hys comynge; 'þe brond shal 24
 come to-fore þe borned fyr; And rygh as the spark maketh the
 brond come, Also þe brond shal make the fyr come after.' Anoper
 prophecye, seynt Molynges seyð of that same: 'A mych man shall
 erne to-fore; & þe most heeddes of desmond & ek of leynestre 28
 he shal defouly; & wyth streynth he shall noblych the wey
 opne to the wepned.' Amorow, whan the tythynge of ham̄ was
 I-spronge, Reymond went hym to the Erle *with* furtý knyghtes
with mych gladnes; & amorow, after þe holy-daye, Thay went 32
 comynly al to þe syte of Waterford, & assaylled the toun ful fersly;
 & twyes thay wereñ rebuked, & ful stalwarhly, of þe Cytezeyns.
 Reymond, that by *purueaunce* & *graunt* of ham al was ymade

amonge ham al, *and* thus ham Sayde: "I-nowe Reymond opynly to vs hath Spoke of mercy and almes-deddes, vn-kyd landis to wynne *and* nat wyth Slaght *and* wyth brennynge. whedyr Alexandyr *and* Iulyus Cesar, that weryn lordys of al the worlde, wonnen londis by such wey, I wold Reymond wolde me answe're. whan thay commyn to vs wel arrayed' to fyghten, If thay had the bettyr, *and* vs had ouercome, woldyn thay, for almesse and for Pite, haue had mercy of vs? Nay, y trow not. ther-for chese oñe of two: Othyr to do manly thyng, wher-for we ben come; and the Pepill that is rebel ayeynnes vs, wythouten eny noyse, wyth wepyn hertely bewrys ham of lyfe / Othyr, yf we shall do almysdede on them, and ham spare, as Reymond hath Sayd, go we to oure shippis, *and* turnne ayeyne, *and* lete we the wrechyd' pepil holde har lond; *and* kepyn without any chalange." Herueyes Iugement Plesid bettyr than Reymondes; *and* weryn the Citteseynnes to deth demyd. They had no galosis; and therfor thay laddyn ham to the clyfe of the See, and put ham adouñ, *and* drovnde ham al.

A. D. 1170.
Cum ad nos expugnandos instructis aciebus aduenerunt.

membris contractis, in maris praecipitium dati sunt.

[CHAPTER XIV.]

The men-tyme, the Erle Rychard, wyth the Power that he had' arraied, was come to Suth Walis; *and* When he had with grete reuerence done his Pylgrymage at Seynt Dauyes, he Put hym to sayle, *and* had good wynd; come into Irland wy[th] two hundryd' knyghtis *and* othyr, more than a thousand: he londid' at Weysford on Seynt Bartolomewes evyn. Then was fulfillid' a ppropheisy that Merlynge Sayde of his comynge: "The brond shal come to-for the brennynge fyre, And ryght as the Sparke makid the brond come, Also the brond shall make the fyre come aftyr." Another prophesy, Molyng Sayd of that same: "A mych man shal erne to-for; *and* the moste hedis of desmond and also of leynystre he shal defeuly; and wyth streynth he shal nobelych the wey opyn to the wepenyd." A-morrow, whan the thythyngis spronge, Reymond went to the Erle with fourty knyghtis with mych gladnys; and amorrow, aftyr the holy day thay went holy to the Cite of Watyrford, and assaylid' the town ful fresly; *and* twyes they weryn rebukyd; *and* ful boldely, of the Citteseynes. Reymond, that by Purueyaunce and graunt of ham

Capitulum xiiij^m.

prophetia Merlini.

prophetia Molyng.

capita conculcans.

bis viriliter repulsi fuissent.

A. D. 1170. prince, & formañ of al the host, sawe & awayted a place good for
to assaylle: he cryed & cleped the wepned men to the assaut,
They take & þay egrely assaylleden, & braken yn-to þe sytè, & folke-mele
Waterford. slowe the meñ yñ weyes & yñ houses, & wañ þe Cytè. In 4
rathnyldes touř wereñ twey rýche meñ ytake, bot þrogh prayeř
of *Macmorgħ*, that thedeř was thañ I-come, he was y-hold alyue.
Mac- *Macmorgħ* brogħit hys doghtyř *with* hým, Eue by name, & spoused
murch's daughter hyř to the Erle, & maden fast sekernesse betweñ ham. Wañ thys 8
Eve is married to Earl was ydo al, þe Erle left meñ for to kepe the cytè, & turned hym
Struguil. *with* the hoste to deuylyñ.

[CHAPTER XV.]

Macmorgħ wýst that myche of the power of hař lond
was I-come to helpeñ hañ of dyuelyñ, & haddeñ beset 12
all þe wodde weyes & þe narow weys thetherward: he left tho
weyes, & lad the hoste throught the montaynes of Glyndelagħ, al
They march, thro' Glendalough hills, to Dublin. harmeles, rýght to the sytè. These cytezeýns, ouer al otheř, hated
wereñ of hym, & that was no wonder; ffor yn some týme thay 16
sloweñ hys fadyř yñ the cytè; & after the harme, thay dydde hým
mych shañ, for thay burryd an hounde *with* hym yn the pute
that he was yn I-leyde. Thay sent messagers to þe Erle, &
namely the Erchebysshop laurence, & besoghteñ pees; & as thay 20
wereñ spekyng of pees, on oon half was Reymond, & on the otheř
Reimund and Miles of Cogan assail and take Dublin. halue a ful hardy knyght, Myles of Cogan, *with* yonglynges well
coueytouse of battaylle & of gettyng. Thay assaylled the Cytè,
& breken In, & wan þe Cytè, wyth gret slaght of þe sýtzeýns. 24
[*Fol. 8a.] * Natheles, the best parte of ham, wyth þe rychest & the derwarthest
thýngys þat thay haddeñ, yn botes escapeden, & wenten yn-to þe
north ylondes, wyth hastoyl, that was maýstre yn the cyte, &
Hasculf and the richest folk escape. har lodesmañ. That day byfel two Muracles yn the cyte: that 28
on of the Croice, yn the moder chýrche of þe trýnyte, whyche the
Cytzeýns woldeñ haue I-ladde *with* ham yn-to the ylandes yn
the see; & for nothyng, thay ne mygħth yt weccheñ out of þe
place. That otheř, of a sergeant that hadde I-robbet the erche- 32
bysshoppes paleys, & per-after come to-for þe rode, & offred a peny:
fyrst, & este-sone, & at euery tým, the peny stert ayeýne to hym.
he bethoght hým that god was nat wel I-quenyted of the robbery

al was made Prynce and forman of al the hoste, Saw and a-waytyd^{A.D. 1170.} a place goode forto assayle. he cried *and* callid the wepenyd men to the assaute and^r thay egyrly assaylid^r, and brakyn Into the Cite, and kyllid the men in weyes and in houses, and wan the Cite. in rathnyldys toure weryn two ryche men take, *and* thay both were be-hedyd: Macsaghlyn of olan was also take, but throgh Prayer Melaghlin of Macmurgh, that ther was than y-come, he was holde alyue. O'Phelan is taken, Macmurgh broght his doghtyr wyth hym, Eue by name, and but kept Spousid^r hydr to the Erle and madyn fast syckyrnys betwene *Ham// alive. Whan this was done al / the Erle Lefte men forto Kepe the Cite [*Fol.7b.] *and* turnyde hym *with* the hoste to deuelyn //

[CHAPTER XV.]

Macmurgh^v vndyrstode that myche of the pepill of the ^{Capitulum xv^m.} contrey was come to helpe ham of the Cite of deuelyn, *and* hadde be-sette al the wodd-weyes and the Narrow-weyes ^{vias nemo-rosas et arctas} thedyrward^r. He lefte thay weyes, and lad the hoste throw the montanys of Glyndelagh, al holde and sound, tyl thay come to the Cite. The Citteseynes ouer al othyr hatid Macmurgh; *and* they wer hatyd of hym: and that was no wondyr. For in some tyme thay slowyn his fadyr in the Cite; and aftyr the harme, thay dyd hym moche shame, for thay buryed an hounde *with* hym in the ^{cum cane cives tumu-lauerunt.} buryles that he was In-leyde. Thay send messangeris to the Erle, *and* namely the archebyschope Laurance, and besoghten Pees; and as thay weryn Spekyn of pees, on oone halue was Reymond and on the othyr syde a ful hardy knyght, Miles de Cogan, *with* yonglynges wel couetos of batail and of getyng^e: They assaylid the Cite, and brokyn In, *and* toke the Cite *with* grete slaghte of the Citesenes. Natheles, the beste parte of ham, *with* the rychest and the wourdyest thynges that thay haddyn, in botis escapedyn, and wentyn into the ^{naves et scaphas .. intrantes} north ylondes wyth hastoyl, that was Captayn in the Cite, and har gouernoure / That day befel two Miraclis in the Cite: that one, of the cros in the Cee church of the trynyte, wych the Citteseynes wold haue take wyth ham into the Ilandys in the see / And for no thyng thay myght not take hit out of the place. That othyr, of a Sergeant that had yrobyd^r the archebysshope-is Place; and ^{sicut in Topographia' declaratur.} ther-aftyr come to-for the rode, *and* offerid a peny: fryst, and aftyr, and in euery tyme, the peny styrte ayeyn to hyñ. he bethoght hym that god was not aplesid of the robbery that he had ^{Op. v. 129.}

A. D. 1170. that he had y-do: he turned hym than, & let take al that he had y-nom¹, & ba[r] hyt ayeyn, & went to þe rode & offred; & hy[s] offrynge the[r] abode. Whan þe Erl had a few dayes I-ordyned for the stat of þe Cytè, he left the[r] Myles de Cogan, 4 keper of þe Cytè & of þe contre, & a partye of þe meyne wyth hym. And by entycement of *Macmorgh*, that bethoght hym of þe old enmyte that he hade to the kynge of Mithe, he went hym to þe contrey, branten, slowen, & robeden, & broghten the contre 8 to noght, for none ne durst hym wythe-stond. Oconghu[r] of Conaght saw that he was the next—as man that seethe hys neighbors hous berne, he may drede of þe sparkes—he sent Messagers to *Macmorgh* yn thys wordes: “Ayeyne þe fou[r]me 12 of ou[r] pees, thou hast imad come yn-to thys lond mych out-come[n] folke. þe whylle that thou held the yn thý leynystre, we hyt tholleth eunly; Now thou, as man that naght ne the thynkest on thyn oth, ne no reuth ne hast of thyn ostage, the 16 merres I-sete of thyn eldren lond, vnryghtfullyo uergoste. Make thyn out-comen men wyth-draw, & turne ajeýne, or els sothly we shul the send thy sones heede.” *Macmorgh* thys herd, & yaf hym a prout answa[r], & sent hym to sey, that he ha[n]d wold hold, 20 & send after more & eke more; that he nold neuer reste tyl he hadde I-wonne Connaght, wyth the kynge-dome of al þe lond, as hys eldre[n] sumtým hyt hadde[n] to-fo[r] hym. Oconnoghur had he[r] of grete dyspyte, & sore was atened, & let smyth of sonnes 24 heed, þat he had hym Itake fore ostage.

and cuts
off his
son's head.

reproaches
Mac-
murch,

Earl
Struguil
leaves a
force in
Dublin,

and
ravages
Meath.
O'Conor of
Connaught

[CHAPTER XVI.]

A Council
of the
Irish
clerics is
held at
Armagh.
The
country's
ill has
come from
enslaving
English
children.
[*Fol.8b.]

Aftyr this, worth gret spech yn-to all þe lond, & mych ferdnesse of the out-come[n] me[n]. Than gaddered ham al to-gedderes, al the clerkes & the wysme[n] of þe lond at 28 ardmagh; & of thys folkes comyng, was mych I-spoke, & longe dalyaunce. At þe laste, comýnly thay accordede[n] al he[r]-to, that, for the sy[n] of þe folk, thys mesaduentur ham ys býfal; namely, that whan thay fonde[n] englysshē-me[n] chylde[n] to sylle[n], that 32 chepmen & robbers woldene brynge to the lond, thay* were wonet to by ham, & do ham yn thraldome; & that throug goddys owne

¹ MS. ymon.

done. he turned hym than, *and* toke al that he toke wyth hym, A. D. 1170. and bare hit ayeyn, *and* went to the rode, and offerid; *and* his offerynge ther abode. / When the Erle had a few dayes y-ordaynyd for the state of the Cite, he lefte there myles de Cogan, keperes of the Cite and of the contrey, and a partey of the meynne wyth hym. And by entycement¹ of *Macmurch*, that be-thought hym of ¹ *instinctu*. the olde enemyte that he had to the kyng of Myth, he went hym As *Macmurch* to the contrey, brantyn, Slouedyñ and robedyñ, *and* broghten the hated O'Rourke of Meath (p. 2-4), Meath is wasted. Oconghoure of connaght Saw that he was the nexte, (as a man that seth his evyncrystyñ his house brenne, he may dred the sparkys;) he send messangeres to *Macmurch* in these wordis: "Ayejne the forume of *in insulam advocasti..* oure pees, thow haste made come into this londe mych strange *aequa-* pepill. the whyle that thow helde the in thy leynystre we hit *nimitur sustinui-* tollid' euyñly. Now thow,—as man that noght rekyth of his *mus.* trowth, ne no pite hauest of thyn hostage,—the meris y-sette² of ² *metas positas . .* thyn eldryñ lond, vnryghtfully ouer-goste³. Make thy strangeres * [³ *insolenter excessisti*] Wyth-draw, and turne ayejne; othyr ellys Sothly we shall the ³ *insolenter excessisti* sende thy Sonnyes hede." *Macmurch* this herde, and to hym yaue a prowte answer, *and* Sende hym to Say, that ' he ham wold holde, and send aftyr more, and eke more, / ande that he wold neuer reste, til he had take *and* conquerid al connaght, *with* al the kyngdome of al the lond, as his predessessouris had to-for hym.' Oconghoure here-of had grete indignacioñ, and gretly ther-of was *indignans Rothericus* grewid'; And he comandid to Smyte of his Sones hede, that he yafe hym for an hostage.

[CHAPTER XVI.]

Aftyr this, Spronge grete Spech in-to al the lond, *and* *Capitulum xvj^m* mych dreded' the strange comen men. Than gadderid ham to-gederes al the clerkys and the wysmen of the land' at Ardmagh; and of this pepil-is comynge, was mych Speche and longe delyaunce. At the last, comynly thay acordid' al herto, that, for the synne of the Pepill, this mys-aventure ham ys *tam a mercatori-* by-fall, specialy that whan thay foundyn Englysh-men childryn *bus, quam* to sill, that Marchandis and roberes wold bryng to the lond, *praedoni-* they were woned to by ham, and pute ham in thraldome; And *bus atque piratis*

A. D. 1170. wreth hyt was, that as syllers wereñ to-fore y-brought yn thraldome, also the byggers sholden after: ffor hyt was somtym̄ that the folke of englund—The maner of har kyngdome was al I-hole—whan thay had noñ otheṛ thyng that þay myghten take to, rathar 4
The English, rather than suffer, would sell their children. than thay wold any myssayse tholy, Thay weṛ I-wont to sylleñ haṛ chyldren & haṛ otheṛ kynnesmeñ, botlð ynto Irlond & ynto otheṛ londes. Theṛ-foṛ hyt may well be soth, that as the byggers, also þe syllers, oft serued wel, througñ so loly gyltes to be y-brought yn 8
The Irish resolve to free all English slaves. thraldome. Theṛ hyt was yn þat consaylle be-heght, & by assent of al comynly I-set, that al the englysshe-meñ yn þe lond that yn thraldome wereñ, shold beñ delyuered, & frely let goo whodyṛso they wold.

[CHAPTER XVII.]

Reports are spread in England of Fitz-Gerald's keeping Irish land. Henry II forbids ships to go to and from Ireland; and orders all English-men home. Her-aftyr spronge tythyngges of the Erle & of þe 12
englysshe-meñ ynto englund; &, as maner ys, myche me made more; & that the Erl hade aproped to hym, nat only leynestre, bot otheṛ londes also, that, by no ryght ne by law, to hym̄ ne to hys wyf longen. The kyng sent anoon, & forebeed that, 'out 16
no lond that were yn hys power, ne shold no shyppen passe yn-to Irland, ne no maner thyng for to bryng; & al meñ that yn-to Irland waṛ comen, shold ayeyn come yn-to englande, wyth-yn þe next estre, oṛ they sholden be dysherytet & ex[y]led out of lond 20
for euer.' The Erl saw that he & hys wereñ narow belad, both of hys men that hym wold leue, & eke that nothyng ne most hym come out of otheṛ landes, of þynge that hym nede was: by comune rede of hys men, he sent Reymond ouer to the kyng 24
that was feṛ yn gascoyne, & thus hym sent to say: "By thy leue, lord, yf y am welle vndyrstond, y went ynto Irland for to help thy trew man, Dermot Macmorgh; þerfor, that al that of hys herytage, otheṛ of opers yn þe lond, almyghty god me hath I-sent, 28
as hyt come of thy graunt & of thy good wylle, also, I wyll that hyt to the turne, to do theṛ-wyth what the lyketh."

[CHAPTER XVIII.]

Thomas a Beket is martyrd. Reymond went to the kyng with such mandement; & the whyle that he folwed the kynges court, abydyng hys 32
answer, Thomas, the archebysshoppē of Cantrebery¹, was martyred

¹ (In margin, in a later hand: The archebushop of canterbury called Tho. Beckett. 1171.)

that, throw godis his owyn wreth hit was, that as the sylleris A. D. 1170.
 weryn to-for broght in thraldome, also the byeris sholdyn be
 brogh[t] in thraldome aftyр / For hit was somtyme that the
 pepil of England the maner of har kyngdome was al y-holde:
 Whan thay had none othyr thyng that thay myght take to,
 Radyр than thay wolde suffyr any dysseese, thay wold syll har
 childyr and har othyr kynnes-men, both into Irland *and* into priusquam
inopiam
ullam aut
inediam
sustinerent.
 othyr landis. Therfor hit may wel be trouth that, as the byeris,
 also the Silleris, ofte Seruyd well, through So wicked doynge, to be
 broght in thraldome. There hit was in that consayll promysyd,
and by assent of al comynly y-Set, that al the Englysh-men
 in the lond that in thraldome weryn, shold ben delyuerid, and
 frely lette goo whedyр So thay wolde.

[CHAPTER XVII.]

Here-aftyр spronge tythyngis of the Erle and of the Capitulum
xvii^m.
 Englysh-men into England; *and* as the maner is, of mych
 thay mad more; and that the Erle had appropierid to hym, not only fama de
magnis
semper
majore,
vulgante.
 leynystere, but othyr londis also, that, by no ryght ne lawe, to hym
 ne to his wyfe partenyd // The kyng sende anone, and comandid
 that 'no shippe, out of no lond that Partenyth to hym, sholde Passe
 into Irland; Ne no maner thyng forto brynge; and al men that
 Into Irland war comyn, sholde ayeyn goo into England wythin the
 nexte Estyr, Othyr they sholde be disherytid *and* exilid out of
 lond for euer.' The Erle saw that he and his weryn narrow bylad, in arcto
jam
positos.
 both of his men that hym wold leue, and also that nothyng shold
 come out of othyr landis of thyng that he had ned to / he toke
 consayle of his men, and Sente Reymond ouer to the kyng, that was
 fere in gascoyn, and thus hym Sende to say: "By youre lycence si bene
recorder,
 lord, yf y be wel vnderstond, y wente into Irland forto helpe yowr
 trew man, Dermot Macmurgh. Therfor, that al that of his [*Fol. 8 b.]
i sic ad
eandem
pro libito
vestro
nutuque
redibit.
 heritage, othyr of otheres, that y haue in the Land, that almyghty
 god to me * Hath sende, as hit come of youre graunt *and* of youre
 good wyle, ¹ also y wille that Hit be turne to yow, to do ther-wyth
 whate Plese yow."

[CHAPTER XVIII.]

Reymond went to the kyng with such mandement; *and* Capitulum
xviii^m.
 the whyle that he folwid the kynges courte, abydyng his
 answee, Thomas, the archebisshope of Cantreberry, was martirid

A. D. 1170. yn englonð, nat wyth-out mych blame to al þe lond-folk, both
 Arch- lered & lewed. That erchebysshopp, after many-fold martyrdome
 bishop lered & lewed. That erchebysshopp, after many-fold martyrdome
 Beket that he þolled, negh seuen yeȝ that he was banshed out of englonð
 suffred for the ryghtes of holy chyurche, In sore & many wepynges, yn 4
 seven years for the ryghtes of holy chyurche, In sore & many wepynges, yn 4
 in exile, double heeȝ about hys body—þat oñ, yn styd of shyrth; that oper,
 personally, yn stydde of breche—nyght & day yn holy prayeȝ & redynge
 and also yn holy wrytte; & o thyng that neste sorow broght to hys
 thro' his hert, that al hys kyñ, men & wommen, yonge & old, wommen 8
 persecuted lyggyne yn chyld-bed, & old men that fore eld yroked weren yn
 kinsfolk, her cradelys, & all otheȝ, clerkes & lewed, that me myght wytt
 that sybrede or otheȝ frendshypp hadden to hym, al thay wereñ
 I-dryue out of englonð; & al they that wereñ of eld that þay 12
 myghty othes swerȝ, swaren vpon the masse-boke that, as sone
 as thay come ouer the see, thay shold go to þe erchebysshopppe,
 [*Fol. 9 a.] & shew hym the * wrechednesse that þay suffred for hys sake;
 who ffor he shold, for reuth of ham, turnen hys hert, & graunt þe 16
 suffred for him. kynges wyll of þynge that he desyred. After such martyrdomes,
 and many otheȝ þat he tholled yn hys lyue, whyche no manly
 hert may bethynke to ful end, the hey martyrdome, that broght
 his chief hys soule to þe blysse of heuyn, & hys body to wyrshypp yn hert, 20
 Martyr- otheȝ many þynge be-týdden that men Aght well vnderstond;
 dom. þat ayeyns hys fomen yede, opyn heed, & opened þe chyrch durȝ
 whyche the monkes hadden I-loke, & seyð þat 'meñ ne shold
 no castell make of holy chyurche'; & hys holy croune bade ayeyn 24
 the naked swerdes for to smyte, & that yn the modyr chyurche,
 heghest of al þe lond, & to-foȝ the weued, that he of fouȝ knyghtes,
 woder than wood houndes, tholled fouȝ woundes yn the holy croun,
 & [n]on without,—so as þe croun ogħt betokne of proteccion to 28
 clergy,—that he deth tholled yn the north syde of þe chyurche,
 whyche betokneth Ihesu crystes passyõ. & thus goddys owne
 knyghte, wythouten any ferdnesse, tholled deth; yn hys lyf of thys
 world, chaunged wel selyly for þe lyf that euer shal lest without 32
 end. And as seynt Tomas-ys day, Apostle, ys þe fyft day afor
 yold, so ys thys Thomas day þe fyft day afeȝ. That Thomas
 was candel I-set yn þe este of þe world; Thys Thomas yn þe west.
 [That] was lyght to aly chyurche yn hyȝ yough, as [Thys] yn hyȝ eld; 36

He was slain in Canterbury Cathedral by four knights, before the Altar.

The Apostle Thomas died on Dec. 21; Beket on Dec. 29.

in England, not wyth-out grete represe to al the land-pepill, both A.D. 1170.
 lerid and lewid. That archebisshope, aftyr manyfolde martyrdom
 that he Sufferid, / ney vij^e. yere that he was banneschid' out of *septennalis*
 Englund for the ryght of holy church, In sore and many wepyngis, *fere exilii.*
 In doubill here about his body,—that on in styd of shyrt, that *tam femo-*
 othyr in styd of breche,—Nyght and day, in holy prayeris and *rati quam*
 redyngē in holy writte. And o thyng that meste Sorrow wroght *corporali.*
 to his hert, that al his kynnes-men, yonge and old, women lyggyngē *nec aetati*
 in chyldbed, and olde men that for elde yrokyd weryn in her *parcente,*
 cradelis, and al othyr, clerkys othyr lewid, that thay mygh[t] know, *nec sexui*
 that weryn of his kyñ, Othyr frendshipe haddyn to hym, al thay *tam misera-*
 weryn dryw out of Englund. And al thay that weryn of elde, *bili san-*
 that thay myght othys swere, Swaryn on the masboke, that 'as Sone *guinis*
 as thay come ouer the See, thay shold go to the archebyschope, and *universi*
 Shew hym the mesury that thay Sufferid for his Sake;' For he *proscrip-*
 shold, for Pite of ham, turnen his hert, and graunt the Kyngē his *tionē.*
 wyll of that, that he desyrid. Aftyr Such martirdomes, and many
 othyr that he sufferid in his lyfe,—the whych in no mannes hert
 may be thoght to ful end,—The hey martirdome, that broght his
 Soule to the blysse of hewyñ, and his body to vyrchip in Erth,
 Othyr many thyngis be-fel that men aght wel vnderstond; that *quod ipse*
 ayenes His enemys yede, opyn hede, and oppenyd the church-durre, *furibus*
 whych the Monkes haddyn y-loke, and sayd that 'men shold not no *hostibus*
 castel make of holy church.' And his holy crowne bare ayeyn the *templi*
 nakyd Swerdes forto smyte, and that in the modyr chyrch, heghist *fores*
 of al the lond, and to-for the auter / that he of foure knyghtes, *aperuit, et*
 wodyr than wode houndis, tholled Foure woundes in the holy croun, *aperto*
 and [n]on wyth-out,—So as the crowñ oght to be know tokyn of *vertice*
 protexcion to clergy,—that he deth Sufferid in the north syde of the *gladiis*
 church, whych be-tokenyth Ihesu crystes Passion. and thus god- *occurrēns.*
 is owyn knyght, wyth-out eny ferd, sufferyd' deth; and his lyfe of
 this world, chaunged' for the lyfe that euer shal leste wythout end.
 And as seynte thomas-is day the apostyl, is the V. day afor yolde, ¹ *ille*
 So is this Thomas-is day, the V. day aftyr. That thomas was candil *nascenti*
 y-sette in the Este of the World; This thomas in the weste. ¹ [That] *ecclesie*
 was lyght to holy churchē in hyr youth, as [This] in hyr elde; and *lumen*
dedit, hic
senescenti.

A. D.
1170-1.
As the
Apostle
gave his
blood for
the early
Church, so
Beket gave
his for the
aged one.

Among all
saints, for

[1 that
tofore]

Beket
alone were
all kinds of
miracles
performd.
He got a
man fresh
eyes and
genitals.

Merlin's
prophecy
of Beket.

[*Fol. 9b.]

Beket died
at 48 [that
is, 53-4],
on Dec. 29,
1170.

[T. MSS.
L. T. Ha.
Cl. n. Op.
v. 262 n.
4.]

Macmurgħ
dies in

May, 1171.

& as he [the Apostle] commenced holy chyrche with hys blode whan
che was arerynge, Also thys, [Beket,] whan she had longe I-stond
& wox yn eld, & redy was to falle, wyth hys blode he ryght hyr vp,
& sette hyr yn ryght stydde. And as he t[oke hym] selue to 4
quellers ffor to areþ þe seknes of holy chyrche, also thys ne douten
nat to taken hym-self to kene swerdes, & lyddeþ men hondes, foþ
þe fredome of holy chyrche to sawe vnwemmed. The fourme of
hys martyrdome, twey verses a latyn shortly comprehendeth, that 8
thus mych ben to vnderstand: "ffoþ crystes spouse, vnder crystes
tyme, yn crystes chyrche, crystes owne leman deyed." Amonge
al the halweid that almyghty god wrought yn erth, of selcouth
myraclys for to showeþ haþ holynesse,—as the blynd to see, the 12
lame to goþ, þe dombe to speke, the deue to hyþ, lasers to clense,
paralys to festnen, y-dropesie & al otheþ manere yueles to helenþ,
the dede to areren, yuel gostes to quetheþ, & al þe fouþ elementes
to haþ commaundement haddenþ,—he aloþ was y-wyrshypped with 16
al these, & more þer-to, thaþ-to-foþ¹ was nat herd ne sey; ffoþ
a maþ that hade hys eghen I-draw out of hys heed, & hys manly
membres y-kytte of & y-cast away, come to hys tombe; & þrogħ
besechyng of hym, god hym sent newe. Of thys holy martyþ, 20
Merlyn seyð thus yn hys prophecy: "A newe martyþ shal aryse
with newe myracles, that yn the worldes endyng, yn the west
of þe world, by specyal vertue, mannys lymmes out I-draw & out
I-corie, ayeyn shald make come. Sorow shal turne ynto yoye, 24
whaþ þe sonnes shal sle þe fadyþ yn hys modyþ wombe; prynces
& hey men * shal come out of þe este yn-to the weste, & lout ham
to þe newe martyres fot-stappes." Al þys was openly I-seyd of
þe holy martyþ seynt Thomas; he was þe whet corne þat fel yn 28
erth, & mych fruyt forth broght. In þe yeþ of burth-tyme .xlviij.;
of hys sacryfyng .viij.; of hys exil .viij.; yn the end of Decembre,
yn þe yere of ouþ lordes yncarnacion .m.c.lxxj.; & was poppe
of Rome, Alexandre the thyrd; Emperouþ of Almayne, ffrytheryke; 32
kyng of ffrance, lowys. Whan the wentyr was I-passed, Dermot
Macmorgħ deyed, þe begyenyng of may, & was bured at ffernes.
A man grett of body; hardy yn fyght amonge hys folke; of lange
& lome cryng yn fyght, hys voys was somdel hors; leuer hym 36

as he commencid holy church wyth his blod whan she was arerynge,
 Also this, whan she had long stond, and wox in elde, and redy was
 to fall, wyth his blode he put hyr in good state, and therin
 confermyd hyr. And as he toke hym-selfe to them that hym
 berewid the lyfe, forto arere the sekenys of holy church, Also this
 doutyd not to take hym-Selfe to s[h]arpe Swerdes, & wickyd men
 hondes, *For the fredome of Holy church to Saue Vn-Wemmede.
 The fourme of His Holy martirdome, two Versis of Lateyñ Sortely
 comprehendyth, that thus mych ben to vndyrstond: "For crystis
 Spouse, vndyr crystis tyme, in crystis churche, crystes owyn leman
 died." / Amonge al the holy Seyntes that almyghty god wrought for
 in erth of voundyrfull miracles, for to Show har holynes,—as the
 blynd to se, the lame to goñe, the dombe to Speke, the deue to
 hyre, leperes to cense, Paralyse to festnen, ydropesye and al othyr
 maner sekenes to hele, the dede to arrere, the vickid Spyrtyts to
 ouercome, And al the iiij^e. elementes to har comaundement haddyn
 —he alon was y-wyrchippid *with* al thes. For a man, that his
 eghen was hym berewid, *and* his manly membris y-kute of and
 cast away, come to his tombe; and throw besechyng of hym, god
 hym sende newe // Of this holy martyr, Merlynge sayd thus in his
 prophesy: "A new martyr shall ryse, *with* new Miracles, that in
 the worldis endyng, in the weste of the world, by Special vertu,
 manes lymes out y-draw and out y-corue, a-yeyn shal make come.
 Sorrow shal make come Into Ioy, whan the Sonnes shal sle the
 Fadyr in his modyr wombe. Princes and hey men shal come out
 of the Este into the weste, *and* lout hame to the new martyr-is fote-
 stappis." Al this was opynly Sayd of the holy martyr Seynte
 thomas. He was the whet-corne that fel in Erth, *and* mych frute
 forth broght. In the yere of his berth-tyme, xlviij.; of his Sacry-
 fyng, viij.; of his exil, vije.; in the Ende of Decembre, in the yere
 of oure lord-is Incarnacion, Ml. Clxxj; and was Pope of Rome,
 Alexandre the ij^e.; Emperoure of almane, Fryderik; Kyng of
 Fraunce, Lowys // Whan the wyntyr was ypassyd, Dermot Mac-
 murgh dyed in the begynnyng of May, *and* was buried at Fernys.
 A man grete of body; hardy in fyght amonge his Pepill; of lange
 ofte cryng in fyght, his voyce was Somdel hors; Leuer hym was

A. D.
1170-1.[*Fol. 9 a.]
*ut eiusdem
formam
conservaret
illaesam.**verus
amator
obit.**quod separatis
membris et
proiectis,
inaudito
more re-
posuit.*Nota de
Sancto
Thoma.*cum matris
in utero
patrem
filii truci-
dabunt.*Descriptio
Murcardi.
(Op. v.
237-8.)

A. D. 1171. was that man hym dredet than loued; þe noble & þe ryche he
 Mac-
 murg'h's
 character. wold brynge to noght; the mek¹ & the pouer he wold rere; al men
 ayeyns hym, & he ayeyns al.

[CHAPTER XIX.]

Hasculf, **A**fty that, about whyt-sontyde, hastoyl, that was some 4
 tyme maystre of deuylyn,—as man that fayn was about for
 with
 Norsemen
 in forty
 ships, led
 by John
 the Mad,
 lands to awreke hys old tene,—come wyt men of northwey & of þe north
 ylondes, *with* ful grett folk, yn furty grett shyppes, & arryued
 yn þe hauen of amlyffy, *with* hā lodes-mān, that hete Iohn the 8
 Wood. Thay wenten out of hā shyppes, men well I-wepned,
 sum *with* longe swerdes, some *with* Iren pletes & round sheldes
 well I-bound about *with* Iren, swerdes & speres & axys ynowe,
 & comen well ordeynly fō to assaylle the toun on the eest half. 12
 Miles de Cogan, keper̄ of þe Cyte, kyndly stalwardly, & hardy,
 wyth wel chosen̄ folke, went out ayeyns ham, and yaf ham fyght;
 bot stronḡ hyt was, to hold fyght ayayn so many *with* so fewe:
 thē had he I-lost some of hys men̄; & O knyghtes theygh̄ was 16
 I-cut *with* þe kappe of hys haubergeon̄ wytht a dynt of a dennys̄
 ax. nede he most turne ȳn ayeine at þe yate, tyll that Rychard
 de Cogan, Myles brothēr, wythe few men, that whylle styly went
 out at the south yate, & sharply becryed ham behynd, & smote 20
 vpon ham. thogh that, þat he come so fersly vpon ham, thay wē
 so afrygh, that thay wyst nat on̄ whych syde thay shold kepe the
 fyght: yn a lytell whyl thay wā dyssconfyte, & toke ham to flyght
 toward hā shyppes. these othēr come ham betwene, & slowe ful 24
 many: thēr was John the Wood I-slayn, & ful mych folk wyth
 hym, throught Walter de Redlesford, that ful stalwarth was yn the
 fyght. Hascoyl was I-take fro the shyppe thēr he was to I-flow,
 & I-brought alyues yn-to the Cyte, & hys lyf I-graunted for 28
 raunceon̄; bot as he stode yn court to-fō Myles, he put forth
 lyddyrlly a prout word & seyde, “wyt lytell power̄ we comen now,
 & thys nas bot assaye of our myght; bo[t] yf I lyue, ār hyt be lange
 to, shal come othēr so mych as pese.” Whan thys was I-hard̄—for 32
 ȳn the mannys tonge hys oft lyf & deth, & me seythe eke, ‘Tonḡ
 breketh bon̄, thegh hym-self ne hawe none’—Myles bad that

rout the
 Norse, and
 drive them
 to their
 ships.
 John the
 Mad is
 slain.

Hasculf
 threatens
 his con-
 querors,

¹ MS. mok. Lat. ‘humilium erector.’

tha[t] a man hym dreddyd than lowyd; the nobil and the ryche A. D. 1171.
 he wold brynge to nocht; the meke and the Pouer he wold awaunce;
 al men ayeynes hym, and he ayeynes al men //

[CHAPTER XIX.]

Aftyer that, about whitsontyd, Hastoyl, that was Somtyme Capitulum xix^m.
 Maystyr of Deuelyn,—as man that fayne was about forto be
 awengid of his old wreth,—come wyth men of North-Wey and of
 the North ylon dys, wyth many pepil, in fourty grete shippys, and sexaginta navibus.
 londyd in the hauyn of Amlyffy, with har captayne that was callid Insano vel Vehementi.
 Ihoñ the Woode¹. Thay wentyn out of har shippis, men wel
 wepenyd, Some with longe Swerdys, Some with Iryñ Platys and
 rounde sheldys, wel bound aboute with Iryñ, Swerdys and Speres alii laminis ferreis arte consultis.
 and axes ynow, and comyn wel ordeynly forto assayle the toun on
 the Eeste halue. * Myles de cogan, Keperø of the Citey, Kynly [*Fo. 1. 9 b.]
 Bolde and Hardy, Wyth Welle schosyn pepill, went out ayeynes innatae animositate audacia.
 ham and yafe ham fyght; but stronge hit was to holde fyght ayeyn
 so many with so few; than had he lost Some of his men; and o
 knyghtes thegh was kut with the lappe of his haubergeoñ, with cum panno loricae praecisa.
 a stroke of a demysñ axe. nedes he moste turne aye at the yate,
 tyl that Richard de cogan, Miles-Is brodyr, with few men, that
 whyle went out at the south yate, and sharpely becryed ham ipsos a tergo acriter exclamando, percussit.
 behynde, and Smote vpon ham. throug that, that he come so Fresly
 vpon ham, thay were so aferde, that thay wyst not on what Syde
 thay sholde kepe the fyght / In a lytyll whyle thay wer dyscom-
 fyte, and toke ham to flyght toward har shippis. thes oþer come
 ham be-twen, and kyllid ful many. ther was Ihoñ de woode Johanne quoque Vehementi.
 y-slayn, And ful mych pepil with hym, throw Water de Redeles-
 ford, that ful bolde was in that fyght. Hastoil was take fro the
 shipe ther he was to flede, and brogh[t] alyues into the Cite, and
 his lyfe gravntid for Raunceoun; but as he stode in courte to-for
 Miles, he sayd lewidly a prowte worde: “Wyth lytil pepil we come
 now, And this was not but assay of oure myght; but yf y lyue,
 ar hit be lange to, shal come othir so mych as thes.” Whan this
 was herde,—For in the manes tonge is ofte lyfe and deth; And as In manibus lingue, mors et vita. Prov. xviii. 21.
 hit is Sayd, Tonge brekyth bone, thegh hym-Selfe ne haue non,—
 Miles commandid that he shold anone out be-ladde, and to Smyte

A. D. 1171. men shold hym anoon̄ out lede, & smyte of þe heed. & thus, for
and is hys hauteyn & prout spech, he lost þe lyf that thā-by-fōr mekely
beheaded. hym was graunted.

[CHAPTER XX.]

[Fol. 10 a.] **S**one aftyr thys, many of thay that weren y-come 4
As Henry II's edict leaves Strugnil bare of men and food, yn-to Irland wyth the Erl, & eke to-fore,—for the kynges
the Irish muster a big army, and besiege Dublin. byddyngē that come to ham, as hyt ys to[1]d a-foōr,—leften the
Gothred, King of Man, and others, Erl, & wenteñ yn-to england. The peple of yrland saw the erl
with thirty ships, beset Dublin Harbour. narrow beladde, both of hys men̄ That hym left, & of vytalle that 8
After two months' siege, and when food is scarce, trukked, whēr-of he hade grete plente thēr-by-fore out of eng-
news comes that Robert Stevenson is besieged in Carrick Fort. land. Thay gaddered ham to-gedders myche folk, al þe prynce
of the lond, with al hār poēr, & besegeden deuelyñ oñ euery 12
Gothred, King of Man, and others, halue; & that was throgħ *procuryn̄g* of laurence, Erchebyssshoppe
of dyuelyñ, as men seyð, for loue of hys folk. he sent also hys
with thirty ships, beset Dublin Harbour. *lettres*, with Oconghours *lettres*, kyngē of Connaght, to Gothred,
kyngē of Manne, & to othēr prynces of þe north ylondes, for to 16
yaue, & myche more hem behete, for to helpe ham. &, for thay
drede ham of al such manere of adventures, Throgħ that, that the
englysshe-men hadden so wel I-conquered vpon̄ þe yrysshe, Thay
comeñ the rather ham to help; & yn lytell whyle came .xxxvi. 20
shyppys ful of stalwarth men wel arayed to fyght, & besetteñ the
hauen̄ of amlyffy. Whan the Erl & hys men wereñ well twey
monthes beleyn̄ yn the syte of dyuelyn, & to ham come non helpe,
nethē̄r of þe lond ne on watȳr, & vytaylle fast ham slaked; & (as hyt 24
ys oft I-found, selde be-falleth oon̄ harme that more [ne come]) come
Donald, Macmorghles sone, of okenseley, to The Erl, & told hym
for that Robert steuenes-son was bes eget yn hys castell that he had
rered at þe carryke, of þe Cytezeyns of weysford & the men of ken- 28
sely, well þre thousand men; & few men had wyth hyñ; [&, but
hym] come socours by the þryd day, that of hym, ne thay that
with hyñ wereñ, neuer no more to thynke. In the syte of dyuelyn,
wēr that tyme be-left with the erl, Moryche fytz-Geraud & Reymond, 32
that from̄ the kyngē was comeñ newly; sory for ham-self & for
hars: & thegh þey weren yn grett angwysshe fōr ham-seleue, thay
wareñ yn̄ wel more fōr hār good brothēr & for hys, that amonge

of his hede. And this had he for his proude Spech loste the lyfe A.D. 1171.
that thar-by-for mekely hym was graundid.

[CHAPTER XX.]

Sone aftyr this, many of them that weryn come into Irland Capitulum xx^m.
with the Erle, and also tofor,—by the kynges comandement
that come to ham as hit is to-for told,—leften the Erle, and wentyn
into england. The pepil of Irland Saue the Erle narrow by-lad, videntes
Hibernici
comitem
et suos,
tam suo-
rum jac-
tura, quam
victualium
defectu . .
jam defici-
entes.
both of his men that hym lefte, and of vytayle that trukked,
wher-of he had grette plente ther-before out of Englonde. Thay
gaderid ham to-gederis mych pepill, al the princes of the londe
with al har Power, and be-segedyn Deuelyn on euery syd. and
that was by procvrynge of laurance, Archebishope of Deuelyn, as
men sayd, for loue of his Pepil / Also he sende his lettres, with
o-conghoure-is lettres, kyng of connaght, to Gothrede, kyng of
Man, and to othyr Princes of the northe ylonde, for to be-Sette
the hauyn of Deuelyn ; and large yeftys and presentis ham yaue,
and mych mor ham promysid, forto helpe ham. and, for thay dred
ham of al Suche adventures, Throgh that, that the Englysh-men
haddyn So wel conqueryd vpon the Irysh, Thay comyn the radyr
ham to helpe. and in lytyll whyle came xxx^{ti}. shippis, ful of bold
men wel arrayid to fyght, and be-setten the hauyn of amlyffy.
whan the Erle and his men weryn wel two monthys besegid in the
Cite of Deuelyn, and to ham come no Soccovr on lond ne on watyr, [* Fol. 10
a.]
* And Vytayle ham falid, (and as Hit ys oft founde, Selde befallyth
one Harme that more ne comyth aftyr, and euer gaderyth to helpe
more and more,) Come Donald, Macmurghes sone of Okensely, to the
Erle, and tolde hym, for that Robert Steuenes-Sone was besegid in
his castel that he had rerid at the Karrike, of the Citteseynes of
weysford, and the men of Okenseley, wel iij^e. M^t. men ; And few
men had with hym ; and, but hym come Socoure by the thyrd day,
that of hym, ne thay that with hym weryn, neuer no more to
thynke. In the Cite of Deuelyn, wer that tyme lefte with the Erle,
Morice fiz Geraud, and Reymond, that from the kyng was come
newely, Sory for ham-Selfe and for haris. and thegh they wer in
grete angwysche for ham-Selfe, they weryn in wel more for har
good brodyr, and for his, that amonge his enemys was besegyde, in tam suo-
rum quam
sui non
mediocriter
anxietate
turbati.

A.D. 1171. hys fomen was beseiget, yn place feibly I-garnset, but a dych & a Maurice hegge of thornes vpon, & lytell ost ston-wal. Moryce arose vp Fitz- to-fore the erl & the knyghtes, & seyde: "Nat to delytes, ne Gerald harangs ydelnes set to drawen, come we nat yn-to thys lande; both¹ for to 4 his men : sechen aduentures, & prouen oū streynt̄h vpon peryl of oūr heedes. We haue I-stond awhyle & heghest, & now we bene
" We were the highest : we are now the lowest. y-turned to the lowest, for so goth þe sykenesse of thys world; eury gladnesse ys endet wyth sorowe, & eury selth hath wnselth 8 at þe end. After þe bryght day, cometh the durke² nyght; & [* Fol. 10 b.] after, the durknesse of * þe nyght ys away I-dryuen *with* þe lyght of þe sone. Ar thys, the ouer-hand was yn all styddes oūr, & plente of alle good; nowe beth so beloken̄, that non help vs ne 12
" No help can come to us. may come, noþer by lond ne by watȳr. On oþer halue, Robert steuenes-sone, whos herdy herth opened vs þe wey yn-to pys land, ys beseged fēr wyt hys fomen̄ yñ folk place. What ybide we? haue we any hope that oūr lond-folk vs come to helpe? thār-to ne 16
" Let us fight! Tho' few, we've heart, and can beat our naked foes." tryst we nat; fōr we beth now yn such law I-sette, þat as þe Iresshe wēr, ār thys, to the englyshe, also þe englysshe beth now to þe Iresshe. thār-fōr gow owt stalwartly, assayllen oūr fomen! thegh we few be, we bēn mēn of herth, & wel I-wepned! ne shal 20
" The English sally out, in three small divisions against 30,000 Irish. neuer naked rascayll, thegh þey many be, haue myght ne power̄ vs to wyt-stond." Whan moryce hadde thys I-seyd, Reymond, þat was I-smyte wyth the same sorow of herth, seyde to ham þe same wordes, & mych mōr, 'that thay woldēn allerformest smyth vpon 24
þe kyn̄g of konnaght, & hym that was heed, & formest & heghest of ham alle.' Al that thēr werēn, heldēn herto, & ren astryf to wepne ham, & leppēn to hors, & deled ham a thre, thegh thay fewe werēn. In þe formest, was Reymond *with* twonty knyghtes; 28
In þe othēr, myles wyth .xxx^{ti}.; In þe pryde, the Erl & morice, *with* fourty knyghtes & Squeryers; & men an-hors & a-foot, to eury of these I-sete, as hyt wold by-falle: thay went ham out of þe syte styllly, about noon-dayes, & *with* so few mēn assayllydēn ān 32
Reimund Fitz-Gerald fights best. hostes of .xxx^{ti}. thousand. Reymond, amonge the fyrst, smote vpon ham; & feȳr to-fōr al othēr: he smote tweyne throḡh-out wyth a speēr. Reymond & Moryce twey sonnes, Geraud & Alexander,

¹ but.² MS. druke.

place febilly garnesyde, but a dyche and a hegge of thornys vpon, and a lytil stone wal. Moryce aros vp to-for the Erle and the knyghtes, and sayd: "Not to delytes, ne ydylnes, come we nat into this land; but forto sechyn adventures, and proven oure Streynth vpon peril of oure hedys. we haue stond awhyle, and hygh; and now we ben turnyd to the louyst; for So is the schavnge of this world. the end of euery gladnes is Sorrow. And euery Surnesse hath vnsmnes at the ende. Aftyr the bryght day, comyth the nyght; and aftyr, the durkenes of the nyght is a-way dryveñ with the lyght of the Sone. Afor this, the ouerhand was in al places our, and plente of al goode. Now ben we So belokken, that none helpe vs ne may come, nothyr by lond ne by watyr. On the othyr Syde, Robert Steuenes-Sone, whos bolde hert openyd vs the way into this lond, is besegid fer with his fomen in febyll place. Whate abyde we? haue we any hoppe that oure lond-pepil wil vs come to helpe? tharto ne trust we not / for we byth now in Such lawe y-Sette, that¹ as the Iryssh wer, or this, to the Englysh, Also the Englysh byth now to the Iryssh. Wherfor go we out boldely assaylyn oure enemys! thegh we fewe be, we ben men of herte and wel wepenyd! ne shaft neuer nakyd raskayl, thegh they many be, haue myght ne powere vs to wythstond." Whan Morice had this sayd, Reymonde, that was Smyte wyth the Same Sorrow of herte, sayde to ham the same wordis, and mych mor, 'that thay woldyn alther-formyst Smyte vpon the kynge of connaght / and he that was hede and formyst of ham al.' Al that ther weryn, heldyn herto, and went to wepyn ham, and leppyn to hors, and delyd ham on thre, thegh thay few were. In the formyst, was Reymond, with twonty knyghtes; In the othyr, Milis, with xxx^{ti}. In the thyrd, the Erle and Morice wy[th] fowrty knyghtes, and Morice with fourty knyghtis and Squyeris; and men an-hors an[d] a-fote, to euery of thys y-sette, as hit wolde befall. they went ham out of the Cite Softely, about noon dayes, and wyth So few men assayledyn an hoste * of xxx^{ti} M^r. Reymonde, amonge the fyght, fryst Smote vpon ham, and ferre to-for al othyr. he Smote two throg-out with a Spere. Reymond and Morices two Sonnes, Geraud and alex

A.D. 1171.
*Non ad
delicias,
viri, non
ad otia
vocati.*

*Auxilium
nobis, nec
mare
mittit, nec
classis
inimica
permittit.*

*ut sicut
Hibernicis
Angli, sic
et Anglis
Hibernici
simus.*

*hora quasi
post
nonam.*

[* Fol. 10
b.]

¹ In the margin, 'as we byth ynglys on to the yryssh, so we byth yryssh on to the ynglys.'

A.D. 1171. thegh thay weŕ fyrst y-sete yn þe latest of þe host, throgh kynd
 The little stalwardnesse hertly smytteð out to the formest, & many dydden
 English host rout to deth. Alle þe other fresshely foloweden aftē; & yn lytell
 the 30,000 whylle dysconfited al þe hoste, & sloweð so many, that no tonge 4
 Irish, ne myght tell. Oconnoghouŕ, þat that tym satte yn bathe, vnnethe escaped: thay folwed the dyscomfytuŕ oñ euery halue tyll þe nyght ham leth. Than thay turned ayeine, & name haŕ pelfre, gold & syluyŕ, clothes & wepne & hors, & wenteð wyth 8 mychel gladnesse yn-to þe syte. Amorow þay lefte good kypyngne yn the syte, & turneden toward weysford by Odroon, wyth baners y-lacet, foŕ to socouŕ Robert steuenes-sonē.

and return to Dublin with great spoil. They march (too late) to aid Fitz-Stephen.

[CHAPTER XXI.]

[Fol. 11a.] **T**he mene time, the folke of Weysford, wythe þe power 12
 Fitz-Stephen's scanty garrison defend themselves bravely. of Okensely, wel thre pousand men, ayeyn haŕ othes I-sweŕ & haŕ trowth, Robert steuenessoñ al vnwardly, with fyue knyghtes & a few bow-men I-found withyn hys feble castel, thay stynt nat to assaylle. thay defendet ham full stalwarthly, thegh they fewe weŕ; 16 & namely a knyght that hete Wyllyam Not, aftyr Robert, ouer al other best dydde. Whan thay myght nat wyth streynth spede, thay bethoght ham that wyth falshed & wyth treyson they wold come wyth-yn ham. They sent to þe dyche twey bysshoppes, 20 that on of Weysford, that other of kyldaŕ, & other mo wyth ham yn habyt of relygyoñ; thay broght with ham massebokes, & Corpus domini, & relykes many, & sworne vp-on ham al, & vpoñ haŕ owne soules, that 'dyuelyn was Itak; & þe Erl & morice & 24 Remond, & the englisshemen, euerychon I-slawe; the host of leynestre & of Connaght comyng to ham-ward; & for good of hym, thay weŕ to hym y-come; that he shold yeld vp his castel, & me shold saue hym lyf & lym, & al his & al har good; for he 28 was ham so fre & so meke lord, me shold trewly brynge hym & his ouer in-to Wales ar the grete hoste of his fomen to hym comen, that nothyng nold spaŕ hym.' Robert leued haŕ speche & haŕ fals othes; he came out & yeldet hym & his, to ham & to haŕ 32 trowth. Thay weŕ no rapŕ out I-comen, that me ne name ham euerychone; & some thay slowen yn þe place; some þay vndide & betten liddyŕly & bonden; & wyth ham selfe I-bounden, kesten

The Irish deceive them;

swear Dublin is taken, and its Chiefs slain.

They offer the garrison a safe transport to Wales. Their false words are believd, and the garrison are slain or imprisond.

andyr, thegh they were fryst Sette in the laste of the hoste, throgh A.D. 1171.
 kynly bolul¹ hertely Smyten out to the formyst, *and* many dyddyn innatae
 to deth. Al the othyr freschely folwedyn aftyr; And in lytyll tamen
 Space of tyme dyscomfyted al the hoste, and slowyn so many, that strenuitatis
 no tonge myght tell. Oconghoure, that that tyme Satte in bathe, indicio . .
 vnneth Escapid. thay folwid the dyscomfiture on euery halue tyll [¹ ? for
 the nyght ham lette. Than thay turned ayeyñe, and toke har et uelutibus
 pilfre, gold and Syluyr, clothis, and wepyn and hors, *and* wentyn et uecluris,
 with myche gladnes into the Cite. A-morrow thay lefte good spoliis
 kepyng in the cite, and turned toward Weysford by Odrooñ, wyth quoque
 baneres ylaceyd, forto Socoure Robert Steuenes-Sonne. et armis
onerati.

[CHAPTER XXI.]

The men-tyme, the pepil of weysford, with the Power of Capitulum
 okenseley, wel iije. M̄. men, ayeyñ har othis Sworne and har xxj^m.
 trouth, Robert Steuenes-Sonne al vn-wittyng, with v. knyghtes Stephani-
 and a few bowmē, fownde within his febil castel, thay stynte not dem im-
 to assayle. thay defendyd ham ful boldely, thegh they fewe were; provisum.
 and Specialy a knyght that was callid William Not, aftyr Robert,
 ouer al othyr best dyd. Whan thay myght not with streynth
 Spede, thay bethoght ham that with falskede and with treysone ad con-
 thay wolde come within ham. Thay Sende to the dyche two suetā
 bysshopis, that one of weysford, that othyr of kyldare, and othyr fullaciae
 mo with ham in habit of religioñ. thay broght with ham masbokes tela fig-
 and Corpus domini, and relykis many, and Sworñ vp-on ham al, menta que
 and vpon har owyn Soulys, that ‘Deuelyn was take; and the Erle, dolosa con-
 and Morice and Reymond, and the Englysh-men, euerychoñe were currunt.
 Slayñ; and the hoste of leynystre and of connaght comynge to ham-
 ward; and for good of hym, thay were to hym come; that he sholde Stephani-
 yelde vp his castel, and thay wold Sawe his lyfe, and al his, and al dae ipsius
 har good; for he was to ham so fre and So meke lorde, they wold commodi
 trewely brynge hym and his ouer into walis, or the grete oste of causa.
 his enemys to hym were come, that nothyng wolde hym Spare.’
 Robert belewid har Spech and har fals othys. He came out, and ² alii ver-
 yeldyd hym *and* his, to ham and to har trouth. Thay were no beribus,
 radyr out-come, than thay toke ham euerychone; and Some thay alii vero
 Slowyn in the Place; Some thay vndide and bettyn vickydy²; *and* vulneribus
graviter
afflicti.

A.D. 1171. The Irish traitors burn Wexford, and go to the Island of Begeri, with Fitz-Stephen. In the pass of Odroon, Striguil defeats a Leinster force.

The Wexford men threaten to kill Fitz-Stephen &c. The English hear of the loss of the Carrick garrison, and weep for it.

[* Fol. 11 b.]

Robert Fitz-Stephen described.

Richard, Earl of Striguil described.

wilych In preson. Nat long thē-after, come soth tythyngges of the dysconfytur of dyuelyn, & the Erles comyng toward ham. the thraytours, whan thay hyt wysten̄, thay setten hār own toūn of weysford afȳr, & barnen hyte; & wentēn ham-self, with wyf & chyl̄d, & al hār ōper good & hār presons, ynto þe Iland of begger-yn̄g, þat hys I-sete yn the entre of the hauen of Weysford. Þe host of leynester come ayeysn hym yn Odrone, & yaf hym fyght yn a paas of o thykke wood, strange yn hym selue, & comerous. 8 Thēr wēr many of the Irysshe y-slaw yn that fyght; & þe Erl & al hys camēn hole & sound yn-to þe pleyne, sawe o man that he per forlese; & meylēr, oūr al othēr, as hys wone was, stalwardly hym thār byladde. ¶ After that, as thay comȳn toward Weys- 12 ford, comen̄ mēn ayeysn ham, & tolden ham the aduentūr of Robert, & of the toūnes bernyn̄g, & seydēn ham sykerly, that ‘yf pay to ham wold vend anoon, pay wold sle hār presons, & send ham the heeddes.’ Whān thus was y-hard amonḡ the oste, who-so 16 had I-hard þe wepynḡe, & the wenynḡe, & the sorow that thay mad, he myght wel sygge that ‘neuer-more sych reuth was amonge mēn I-sey.’ he was mān that noon othēr was hys eunynḡe In all goodnesse¹, & ensampell to all knyghtes that any stalwarthnesse 20 wold begynnyge; * ffor yn Wales & eke yn Irland many aduentures both god & yuel had I-fond, that oftēr weren hys aduentures hard, thegh thay som tyme welcomēn wyth hym. He was man mych of body, ²fayr vysage, soft & rody, nat ful becumliche; grete 24 meet-yeuer, large & fre thogh̄ al thynḡe, & of grett solace yn Iappynḡe & pleynḡe; bot to mych, & vnmesurable, he yaf hymself lecherye². The Erl was man of suche manere; ³he was samroed, with grey eghen, wommanes vysage, & sproty, smal spech, 28 short nek³; on al othēr manere he was of faȳr body, & alonge fre & meke; ham that he hade nat to yeue to, he quemed ham with faȳr spech: out of wepne, he was as redy to otheres byddynḡe

¹ O virum, virtutis unicum, verique laboris exemplum.—*Op.* v. 271.

²⁻² vultuque decenti; et statura paulo mediocritatem excedente: vir dapsilis et largus, liberalis et jocundus, sed vino Venerique trans modestiam datus.—*Op.* v. 271-2.

³⁻³ Vir subrufus, lentiginosus, oculis glaucis, facie feminea, voce exili, collis contracto.—*Gir. Camb. Op.* v. 272. Rolls Series.

boundy[n]; *and with hym-Selfe y-bound, kesten vnmercyably in* A.D. 1171.
 pryson¹. Not lange ther-aftyr, come trew thythynges of the dyscom-
 fyture of Deuelyn, and the Erlis comynge toward ham. the
 traytours, whan thay hit Vndyrstode, thay Setten har owyn toune
 of weysford afyre, and brentyn hit / And wenten hame-Selfe, with
 wyfe and chylde, and al hare othyr good and har prisoneres, into the
 Iland of begeryn, that is at the Entrest of the hawyn of weysford: *ad insulam*
 the Hoste of Leynystre come ayeynys hame in odroon, and yafe *Begeri . . .*
 ham fyght in a paace of thyke wodde, strange in hym-* Selfe, and *quae et*
 comeros². Ther wer many of the Iryssh Slayn in that fyght; ande *sancta*
 the Erle and al his came hole and Sounde into the Playn, Saue *vocalur.*
 o man that he there forlese. And Meylere, ouer al othyr, as he *[* Fol. 11*
 was woned, boldely hym there bore / Aftyr that, as thay comen *a.]*
 toward weysford, came men toward hame, and toldyn ham the *† ex parte*
 aduenture of Robert and of the tounes brennynge, and † Sayd ham *quoque*
 Surly, that ‘yf thay wolde to ham wende anoone, thay wolde sle har *proditorum*
 prisoneres, and Send ham the hedys.’ Whan this was herde amonge *firmiter*
 pe hoste, who-so hadd herd the wepyngge, and the lementacion and *asserentes,*
 the Sorrow that thay made, he myght wel say that ‘Such Sorrow *quod si*
 was neuer amonge men Sey’ // He was man, that none othyr was *ad illos*
 his eunyngge in al goodnesse, and Ensampil of al knyghtys that any *accedere*
 boldnys wolde begynne. for in Walis, and also in Irland, many *forte prae-*
 aduentures both good and euyl had fovnde, that offer weryn his *sumant,*
 aduentures hard, thegh thay Sometyme wel comyn with hym. he *praecisa*
 was man myche of body, fayr vysage, Softe and rody, not ful be- *sibi suorum*
 comlych; good mette-yeuer, large and fre through al thyngge, and of *capita*
 grete Solace in Iaypyngge; but to mych, and vnmesurably, he yafe *statim*
 hym-Selfe to Lechery // *cuncta*
remittent.

The Erle was man of Such manere: he was wyth-out doute of *Descriptio*
 grey eighen, womanes visage, *and* Sproty, smale Speche, Short *Ricardi*
 neke: on al othyr maner, he was a fayre body, and alonge fre and *Comitis.*
 meke. thay that he hadd not to yew, he plesyd with fayre Spech³.
 Out of wepyn, he was as redy to otheres byddyngge, as thay to hym.

¹ in carceres, et vincula contruduntur.—*Op.* v. 271.

² quamquam in sui natura arcto nimis et inuio, concidibus tamen plurimum arte munito.—*Op.* v. 272.

³ Quod re non poterat, verborum suavitate componebat.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1171. as other̄ to hys: alle thyng he dydde by rede of hys meīd, & Description of Richard, Earl of Striguil. nothyng wyth-out. Out of bataylle, he had more of knyght thaīd of host-ledeīr; yn bataylle, more ledeīr than knyght; & yn al aduenturs of bataylle, he was stydfast, ful connyng, & tokne of 4 recet to al hys host; & for noīd vnhap he ne amayed hymself, ne yn wanhope ne fel; ne for ne good chaunce, he ne made hym the prutter ne þe more hautayīd; bot euer-more, yn al aduen[tu]rs, of stydfast herth & trewe. 8

[CHAPTER XXII.]

The Earl of Striguil

sails to England, and finds Henry II at Newnham, Glostershire, ready to cross to Ireland. The Earl yields Dublin and all haven-towns to Henry,

who goes to Pembroke, and waits there for a favourable wind.

[* Fol. 12 a.]

Henry's Norse goshawk

Whan the erl hadde I-hard the trayson þat was I-done to Robert, wytht myche sorow of hert he went hym with the host to Watyrford; & þer he fond heruy of mountmorthy, that thaīd wase neweīd I-comeīd out of englond from̄ þe kyng, 12 & broght wryttes, & eke by mych amonested the erl that he shold wend to the kyng. he hade shyppes redy, & good wynd; he name heruy with hym, & went ouer; come to the contre of clandechestre, to Newenham, ther he fond the kyng with mychel 16 host, redy to pass yīd-to Irland. & after myche speche betwene ham ymade, & myche dalyaunce, thogh heruyes modelyng & comyng about þe erle, & eke hys besechyng, the kyng name of hym manred for̄ to hold leynestre of hym; & the Erl graunted þe kyng, 20 dyuelyīd, & all the hauen townes vpon̄ þe see, with har Candredes & castelles þer-vpon̄ y-set; & that other̄ parte of hys conquestre, he & hys heyres sholden̄ holden̄ of þe kyng & hys heys. Whan thys was al on thys manere I-done, the kyng toke the wey yn-to 24 south Wales, & cam to pembroke; & theīr yn þe contre abode with hys host longe whyle, aīr he had wynd for̄ to passe. The whyle that he was thaīr, he hadde houndes & haukes, as man that mych delyted yn suche game. .O. day he went by the strond of þe see, 28 & baīr a mych goshawke of northwey vpon̄ hys hand. Than sat vp-on̄ an hegh clyff ouer the strond, a facon̄ gentel, negh hys nest, theīr he was woned to brede. The *goshake sawe the facon̄, & a-bated to hym. the kyng that saw; & kest hym of hys hand; & 32 he nam hys flyght toward the facon̄, hym fore to henten: the facon̄ sawe hym comyng, & nam hys flyght an hegh, & escaped of hym; þe goshawke turned ayeyne to þe kynges hand; & aīr

Al thyng he did by consayle of his men, and nothyng *without* / A.D. 1171.
 Out of battayl, he had more of knyght than of hoste-leder; in
 battayle / more ledder than knyght / and in al aduentures of *In praelio*
 battayle, he was stydfaste, ful conyng, and tokyn of recette to al his *positus,*
 hoste; and for no vnhafe he was not aferde hym-Selfe, ne in van- *firm suis*
 hope ne felle; ne for no good chaunce, he was not the Pruttyr, ne *recupera-*
 the heyer; but euer-more, in al aduentures, of stydfaste herte and *tionis et*
refugii
signum
manebat.
 trewe.

[CHAPTER XXII.]

WHan the Erle had herde the trayson that was done to *Capitulum*
 Robert, *with* myche Sorrow of herte he went *with* al the *xxij^m.*
 hoste to watyrford; and ther he founde heruey of montmurthy,
 that that tyme was come out of England frome the kynge, and
 broght writtes, and Eke mych amonneschyd the Erle that he sholde
 wend to the kynge. he had ship redy, and good wynd; he toke
 heruey *with* hym, *and* went *ouer*; come to the contrey of clandecestre,
 to New-Enham, ther he found the Kynge *with* grette hoste, redy to
 Passe Into Irland. and aftyr mych Speche betwen ham made, and
 myche delyaunce, throug herueyes medlyng and comyng about the *circum-*
 Erle, and also his besechyng, the kynge toke of hym concayle forto *ventu*
 holde leynystre of hym; and the Erle graunted the kynge, deuelyn, *pariter et*
 and al the hawyn tounes vpon the see, *with* hare candredes and *interuentu*
 castelis there-vpon sette; and that othyr Parte of his conqueste, *He *[* Fol. 11*
 and Hys heyres sholde Holde of the Kynge and [his] Heyrys. *b.]*
 When this Was on this manere done, the kynge toke the way into South
 walis, and came to Pembroke¹; and ther in the contrey abode *with*
 his hoste longe tyme, ar thay had wynd to Passe. The whyle that
 he was there, he hadd houndes and hawkys, as man that mych
 delytyth in Such game. O day, he went by þe see stronde, and bar
 a mych goshauke of Norway on his hande. Than Sate vpon an hey
 clyfe *ouer* the stronde, a faucon gentyll, ney his neste, ther he was
 wonyd to brede. the goshauke Saw the faucon, and abated to hym *laeva*
 hym forto smyte. the faucon saw hym comyng, and toke his flyght *projecit*
 an hey, and Escapid of hym. the goshauke turnyd ayeyn to the

¹ Et Penbrochiam veniens, pulcherrimam in brevi Milverdico portu [Milford Haven] classem conjunxit.—Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 273.

A.D. 1171. he myght fully take to hym, the facon̄ smote to hym from an
 is kild by heyght, & forcleue hym the rygge, & kest hym adoune dede at the
 a Welsh kynges foote. Al thay that hyt saw, hadden thēr of myche wondyr.
 falcon. Than bade the kyng, that fro that tyme, the bryddes of that facons 4
 neste shold euer-mō be I-kepte to hys owne be-houe; & so thay
 wēr, euery yeyr; & yn al hys kyng-dome wer nōd so good facons
 I-found, ne so bold.

[CHAPTER XXIII.]

O'Rourke, **T**he while that thys was, Roueryke, the kyng of Myth,— 8
 king of Meath, awayted that the erl was out of lond; & Reymond &
 lytel folk was beleft ar dyuelyn, the syte & þe contrey for to kepe,—
 with mych folke come to dyuelyn̄ about myd-heruest, & assaylled
 assaults the walles of þe syte with gret streynth & loly crye, & wend 12
 Dublin, early in September, but is beaten off by Miles of Cogan; and his son is slain.
 wel to haue I-take þe syte, & al þat þer-In was. bote ther
 streynthys & stalwarthnesse, hyt mote nedes shewe hymself:
 Myles de Cogañ & hys meñ preuely wenten out, & smote grymly
 vpon ham, so þat yn lytell whyl thay wereñ al dyscomfyted. Bot 16
 roury hymself vnnethe escaped; & hys sone, a welle stalwarth man
 amonge hys folk, was thār I-slawe, wyth many other.

[CHAPTER XXIV.]

Nota: de ¹ **A**ftī this, whan the kyng had I-dyght al that nede
 primo aduentu Regis Anglie in hiberniam
 Henry II He put hym to saylle; passed the see, hool & sound; & arryued at
 lands at Waterford on Oct. 18, 1171, fulfilling prophecies of Merlin and St. Moling.
 was to so noble comynge ynto Irlond, he went to seynt 20
 dauyes; & besoght the holy mañ, seynt dauy, with grett deuocion
 & mych wurshyppe. And tho wedēr hym come, & wynd at wylle.
 He put hym to saylle; passed the see, hool & sound; & arryued at
 Waterford on seynt lukes day, with fywe houndred knyghtes, 24
 & men, an hors an a foot, fulle many. Than was fulfilled a pro-
 phyce that Merlyn seyde: "out of þe Este shal come a fȳr
 bernynge, & shal Irlond al about for-swely." And seynt Molyng
 seyde þus: "Out of þe eeste shal come a stronge thondred, & shal 28
 smyte yn-to þe weste, & al the st̄reynth of Ormond adoun brynge."
 He arryued, the yēr of hys kyngedome, senthe; of hys elde .xl.;

¹ Later note in right margin: 'For in Martilogis the king brought 400 great shippes into Irelande, and in short time subdued the whole lande, beinge governed by 5 kinges, all which submitted to the king, except the king of Connaght, who kept himself in woods and marishes.'

kyngys hand; and, Ar he myght fully take to hym, the faucon smote
to hym from an hey, and for-clew hym the bake, and kest hym doune
ded at the kynges fote. Al thay that hit Saw, ther-of had grete
wondyr. ¹ Than comandid the kyng, that fro that tyme, birdis of
that faucon-is neste shold euer-more be kepe to his owyn behow;
and So thay were, euery yere. And in al his kyngdome wer
none So good faucones y-found, ne so bolde.

[CHAPTER XXIII.]

THe mene-tyme that this was / Roueryke, the kyng of
mythe¹, —be-helde his tyme, and that the Erle out of lond was,
and Reymond and lytil peple was lefte at Deuelyn, the Cite and the
contrey to kepe,—wyth mych pepyl come to deuelyn about myd
hervyst, and assaylid the wallis of the Cite with gret Streynth and
grymly cry, and wend wel to haue take the Cite, and al that therin
was. But ther streynthis and bolnys, hit mote nede Schow hym-
Selfe : Miles de Cogan and his men priuely wentyn out, and smote
grymly vpon ham, so that in lytyll whyle thay weryn al dys-
comfyted. But Roury hym-Selfe vnneth Escapyd; and his Sonne,
a wel bolde man amonge his pepil, was ther Slayn, with many
oper.

[CHAPTER XXIV.]

Aftyr this, whan the kyng had dygh al that nede was to So
nobyl comynge into Irland, he went to Seynt Dauyes, and
besoght the holy man, seynt Dauy, with gret deuocion and myche
wyrchippe. and then wynde and weddyr hym come at wille. he
putte hym to sayle, and passyd the see, holde and Sounde; and
londyd at Watyrford on Seynte Luke-is day, with fyue hundred
knyghtes, and men an hors and a foote, ful many. Than was fulfillid
a prophesy that Merlyn Sayd thus / “Out of the Este shal come
a fyre brennyng, and shal Irland al aboute forswely.” And seynt
Molyng sayd thus, “Out of the Este shal come a stronge thondyr,
and shal smyte into the weste, and al the streynth of Ormond
adoune bryng.” he londyt, the yere of the kyng-dome, the Senfte;
of his age, the xl; of our lordys incarnacion, M^t. Clxxij; and was

¹ rex monoculus Medensis Ororicus . . . cum multitudine magna, circa kalendas Septembris, Dubliniam venit.—Op. v. 274.

A.D. 1171.
*1 singulis
rex annis,
circa nidi-
ficationis
tempora,
propter
falcon s
terrae
illius, qui
marinis
in rupi-
bus exclu-
duntur,
mittere
consuevit.*
Capitulum
xxiiij^m.

*Sed quo-
niam
virtus
claudi
nescit; et
ignis op-
pressus, in
flammam
erumpit.*

Capitulum
xxiiij^m.

*Nota de
primo
aduentu
Regis
Anglie in
hiberniam.*

*Veniet ab
aurora
turbo
validus.*

A.D. 1171. of our lordes Incarnacion .M.C.lxxij ; & was poppe, Alexander the thryd ; Emperour, ffryderyke ; kynge of ffrance, lowyse.

[CHAPTER XXV.]

Henry II
has Fitz-
Stephen

The kynge abode at Waterford a fewe dayes. Theder come the sytzeins of weysford, & broght to hym Robert 4 steuenesse-sonne, as for gret seruyce, & yn hope of good reward ; ffor as myche as he come yn-to Irlond, lond to conquer, wythout auctoryte of hegher prynce, & yaue other, ensample for to comen ynto the lond. The kynge, at the byggynnyge, told of hym grete 8

* vnworthynesse ; & edwyte hym, with grete thretynge, of that grete boldnesse ; & lete take hym, y-bound as he was, & gyued hym to another, & put hym yn Rathnyldestour for to kepeñ. Soine 12

per-after come the kynge of Corke, Dermot Maccarthy, & yeld 12 hym to the kynge, & dydde hym homage, & swar hym hold othes, & delyuered hym ostages for to be to hym hold & trew, & be hym truage euery yer of hys land. ffrom thus, the kynge went wythe the hoste to lysmore, & ther was twey dayes ; & fro 16 thus, went to Casshle. Theder came donald Obreeñ, kynge of lymeryke, to hym vpon the waty of ssur ; & for to haue pees, yeld hym to þe kynge yn al manere as Maccathy hadde done. The kynge set kepers both at Corke & at lymeryke ; & to hym 20 comen the hoste of both contrees aftyr Maccathy & Obreen, & yeld lam to þe kynge, & becomen hys meyn by othes & ostages ; so that ther was none that war of any name yn al Monestre, that by hys good wylle ne yeld hym to the kynge. Whan thys was al I-done, 24 the kynge, with mych wyrsshyppe & wyth ryche yiftes, lete euery mañ wend yn-to hys owne lond, & went hym-self by Tybrach ayeyne to Waterford. þer was ayeyne Robert y-broght to-for hym. The kynge saw hym, & bethoght hym of þe gret goodnesse þat 28 was yn hym, & of hys stalwarthnesse & hys hardy hert ; of many good seruices that he & hys hadden I-done, wyth mych trauaylle & grette perille of lyue : he had grett reuth of hym yn hys hert ; & through besechyng of hegh men, al hys wreth, wyth good hert 32 he hym foryaf, & delyueret hym out of pryson, & lete delyuer hym hys londes þat hym wereñ be-nomeñ, of Weysford & of þe

[* Fol. 12
b.]

put in
prison.
The King
of Cork
does
homage to
Henry II ;

so do the
King of
Limerick,

and all
the best
folk of
Munster.

Henry II
returns to
Waterford,

pardons
Fitz-
Stephen,
and re-
stores him
his lands.

pope, Alexandyr the thyrd; Emperoure, Frederike; kyng of A.D. 1171. Fraunce, Lowys.

[CHAPTER XXV.]

THe Kyng abod at Watyrforde a few Dayes. Thedyr come [Fol. 12
the Cytteseyns of Weysford, and broght to hym Robert ^{a.}]
Steuenes-Sonne, as for grete Seruyse, and in hope of good reward; ^{Capitulum}
for-as-mych as he came into Irland, lond to conquere, wythout ^{xxv^m.}
auctorite of heghyr Prince, and yaue othyr ensampil forto come ^{quasi sub}
into londe. The kyng, at the begynnyng, tolde of hym gret ^{praetextu}
Vnuorthynys; and reprewid hym, with grete tetrynge, of that grete ^{obsequi,}
boldnes; and lette take hym, bound as he was, and gywid hym to ^{eo quod}
anothyr, and Put hym in Rathnyldys toure forto kepyn. Sone ^{Hiberniam}
ther-aftyr come the kyng of Corke, Dermot Maccharthy, and ^{citra ipsius}
yelde hym to the kyng, and dyd hym homage, and Sware hym olde ^{assensum}
othis, and delyuerid hym hostagis forto be to hym holde and trew, and ^{primus}
ber hym truage euery yere of his land. From thens the kyng went ^{intraverit,}
with the hoste to Lysmor, and ther was two dayes; and fro thens ^{aliisque}
went to Cassell. Thedyr came Donal Obreyne, kyng of Lymerik, ^{malignandi}
and to hym on the watyr of Sure; and for-to haue pees, yelde hym ^{occasionem}
to the kyng in al maner as Macchardy hadd' done. The kyng ^{praestiterit,}
Sette keperes both at Corke and at Lymerike; and to hym come the ^{vinctum}
Best of both contreis aftyr maccharthy and Obreñ, and yelde ham ^{et captivum}
to the kyng, and be-comyn his men by othis and hostagys, so that ^{adducunt.}
ther nas none that was holde of any reputaciō in al Monester, that
by his good wyll ne yelde hym to the kyng. Whan this was al
done, the kyng, with mych vyrchip and wyth ryche yeftys, lette
euery man wend into his owyn lond, And wente hym-Selfe by
Tybraght ayeyne to watyrford. ther was ayeyn Robert broght
to-for hym. The kyng Saw hym, and bethoght hym of the grete
goodnesse that was in hym, and of his boldnys and his hardy herte, ^{rex videns}
of many good seruyces that he and his haddyn donē with mych ^{virum}
trauayl and grete Perel of lyfe. He had of hym grete Pite in his ^{tantis for-}
herte; and, throw besechyng of good men, al his wreth with good ^{tunae peri-}
herte he hym for-yaue, and delyuerid hym out of prisone, and ^{culis, et}
delyuerid hym his londys that of hym wer take fro, of Weysford ^{toties, ex-}
^{positum.}

A.D. 1171. contrey about. Some syggeñ that the kynge lete to-draw the traytours that hym betrayed; Bot Maystre Geroud ne telleth nothyng *per*-of; & therfore I ne tel hyt nat to sothe, bot hyt oght well be so.

Master Gerald says nothing of traitors being drawn and quartered.

[CHAPTER XXVI.]

The Kings of Connaught and Meath yield to Henry II's messengers.

Prophecies [*Fol. 13 a.]

of St. Moling and Merlin.

The Irish nobles wonder at the fine meals and decorations at Henry II's feast.

Sacriligious bowmen die suddenly.

Whan þe kynge had thus I-do, he left at Waterford, Robert beranardessoñ, wyth mych meyne; & by Ossery, name the wey toward dyuelyñ. In that wyage, the kynge of Ossery came to hym, & yeld hym to the kynge; & whan he hade I-bydde awhyll at dyuelyñ, theder come Al þe heghest Iresshe-meñ of leynestre, & besoghten pees, & yolden ham to the kyng. Roryke O'conghouñ, the kynge of Connaght, ayeyns the kynges messagers at the watyr shynnen,—that ys to wyttend, hugñ þe lacy & wyllyam Al-delines sone,—ther he yeld hym to þe kynge; & the kynge of Myth Also; So that ther nas none heght mañ yn Irland, that ne come to the kynges owne body, or sent messagers for to be-comen hys man, & yeld hym to hym, sawe only thay of vlnestre. Than was fulfilled a prophecye that seyñth Molyng seyde: “To-for hym shall foot-falle þe prynces, & trogh¹ boxom-fastines² the lyme of pees shul vnderfonge.” Merlyn seyde an-other: “Tho is lyght, the foules of the Iland shollen togedder fle; & the most of ham, with har wenges I-brant, shollen ouerthrowen yn thraldome; the fyf deles shollen be broght yn-to on, & the syxt shal ouercome the strengest places of Irland.” Whan the mydwyntter came, many of the heghest comen to þe kynges court to feste; & myche wonder ham thocht of the noble seruice that þey *per* saw, & of the myche plente of mete & of drynke, of bordes I-sette, & fayr clothes vpon; the hegh seruice of panetrye & buttellerie, & ryche vessels of gold & syluer; the many manere metes of kechen, on the manere of Englonde, whych thay had neuer *per*-to-fore I-sey. After that þe fest was heghly & fayr I-hold, euery man went wyth gladnesse yn-to hys owne. In that tyme, weren bowemeñ at ffynglas I-horberowed, & wenten ynto chyrche haye, & hewen adoun trees, that seyntes by old tyme hadden *per* I-sete: *per* came sodeyn deth vpon ham, euerychoñ. [See Giraldus's *Topogr. Hibern. Opera*, v. 135.]

¹ A later overline *h* is above the *tr* of 'trogh.'

² or 'fastmes.'

and of the contrey aboute. Some sayne that the kyng^e lette to-A. D. 1171. draw the traytours that hym betrayed. But Maystyr Geraud ne tellyth nothyng^e ther-of; and therfor y ne tell hit not for throuth, but hit oght wel be so.

[CHAPTER XXVI.]

Whan the kyng^e had thus donē, he lefte at watyrford, Robert Capitulum xxvj^m. Barnardessonne, with mych pepill; and, by Ossory, toke his way to Deuelyn. In that vyage, the kyng^e of Ossory came to hym, and yolde hym to the kyng^e. and whan he had bydd awhyle at deuelyn, thedyr came all the heghyst Irysh-men of leynystre, and be-soghten pees, and yeldyn ham to the kyng^e. Roryke Oconghoure, the kyng^e of connaght, ayeynēs the kynges messaungeris at the waty of shynnyn,—that is [to] Say, hugh de Lacy and Willam aldelines nunciis regis . . . occurrit. Sone,—ther he yelde hym to the kyng^e; And the kyng^e of Myth also; So that ther was no man of any reputacioun that he ne come to the * Kyngys owyn Body, or Sent messangeres forto Becomyn Hys man, [*Fol. 12 b.] Saue only thay of vlyster // Than was fulfillid a prophesy that Seynt Molyng sayd: “To-for hym shal foote-fall the pryneys, and, procident principes, et fucato sub foedere pacis amorem consequentur. sextus Hiberniae moenia subvertet. through buxumfastnys, the lyme of pees shal vndyrfonge” // Merlyng^e sayd anothy^r prophesy: “To his lyght, the foulys of the yland shullyn to-geddyr fle; and the mest of ham, with har wynges y-brante, shullyn ouer-throwyn in thraldome¹. the fywe delys shal be broght into one, and the Syxte shal ouercome the Strongyst placis of Irland²” // Whan the Mydwyntyr came, many of the heghest men comyn to the kynges courte to feste; and mych wondyr thay had of the nobil seruyce that they ther Sawe, and of the mych plente of mete and of drynke, of bordys sette, and fayre clothis vpoñ; the hey Service of panetrye and buttellerye, and rysh wesselis of golde and Syluyr; the many maner metys of kechen, on the maner of Englonde; whych they had neuer ther-to-for Seyn². Aftyr that the feste was ryaly holde, euery man went wyth gladnys into his owyn. In that tyme weryn bow-men at Fynglas y-herberowid, and wentyn Into church-hay, and hewyn adovn trees that Seyntys by olde tym had ther Sette: there came Sodayn deth vpon ham eueryoñ.

¹ corruent in capturam.

² Why wasn't this crane bit englisht? ‘carne gruina, quam hactenus abhorrerant, regia voluntate passim per aulam vesci coeperunt.’—*Op.* v. 280.

A.D. 1172.

Henry II,
wishing to
purify
Irish life,
assembles
the Clergy
at Cashel.

The lond was than yn good pees by-fōr þe kyng, & þe pees wel I-hold: the kyng had wel y-hard that þe folk of the lond was of vnclene lyf, & ayeine god & holy chyrche; he thoght that he wold brynge the folk ynto better lyf, & myche 4 desȳr hadde thē-to; he leth assembly al þe clergye of þe londe at Casshell, & that me enquered & herd openly the fylthede of the lond-folk yn whych thay ladde hār lyf; & setten hyt ȳn wrytte, vnder the bysshoppes sele of lysmore, that was eke legat of þe 8 court of Rome, & heghest of dygnyte ouer al thay that thē wēr; & þe statutes of holy chyrche Whych yit mēn halte, yn þe manere þat holy chyrche ham holte yn Englonde, he lete thār sette: whych statutz, yn the wordes that thay werēn thē I-swewed, ys non 12 harme thegh̄ me expresse ham here:—

NARACIO. [CHAPTER XXVIII.]

NARACIO.

The Synod
at Cashel,
under the
Romish
Legate,
the Bishop
of Lismore.

In the yer of our lordes Incarnaciōn m.c.lxxij, the forme yēr that þe kyng of england, henry, Irland wan; Crystyēn, bysshoppe of lysmore, & legat of þe court of Rome¹; 16 Doughter, Erchebysshoppe of Casshell; laurenz, Erchebysshoppe of dyuelȳn; Cathel, erchebysshoppe of Connaght; wyth leed bysshoppes, Abbotes, priours, & many other prelates of holy chyrche yn Irland, through the same kynges commaundement 20 comen̄ to-gedder yn þe See of Casshell; & for þe state of holy chyrch to brynge yn-to better fourme, helden thē hār consaylle. To thys conseyl, comen̄ these from the kyng I-sent: a noble man Rolf, abbot of byldewdys; Ralf, Erchedekene of landaf; Nychol 24 the prest, & other many, the kynges clerkes & hys messagers. The statutes ōr constytuciōns of that consaylle bēn these here I-wrytten, & by the kynges auctoryte I-stablet. ¶ The fyrst ys, that crysten men In Irland shvllen leuen̄ hār kynnes-wommen 28 † & hēr sybbes, whyche þay have ār thys I-hold to hār wylle out of spoushode, & lawfully spouse other wommen, & spousehede lawfully hold². That other ys, that the chyldren̄, at þe chyrche dorre shullen̄ bēn I-primseined³ of the prestes hond, & yn þe holy 32 fantstones yn hār moder chyrches to be I-fulled⁴. The thrydde,

Statutes or
Constitutions
made
at it:—

1. Irish
men shall
put away

[† Fol 13.
b.]

their
concubine
kins-
women,
and marry
legally.

2. Children
shall be
baptized in
church
fonts.

¹ Late sidenote in MS.: 'Establishment of orders for the Clergy, and matters of Religion.'

² repudiato cognatarum et affinium contubernio, legitima contrahant matrimonia, et observent.—*Op.* v. 282. ³ catezizentur, ⁴ baptizentur.

The lond was than in good pees by-for the kyng, and the pees wel holde. the kyng herde that the pepil of the londe was of vnclēn lyfe, and ayeyn godd and holy churche. he thogh[t] that he wolde bryng the pepil Into bettyr lyfe; and mych desyr had therto. he Sende for al the clergy of the lond at Casshel; and that he Enquerid and herde opynly the fylthed of the lond-pepill in whych thay lad har lyfe; and Setten hit in writ, vndyr the Byschopis sele of lysmore, that was also legat of the courte of rome, and heyghest of dygnyte ouer al thay that there were. and the Statutes of holy church, whyche yit men halte¹ in the maner that holy church ham holte in England, he lette thare Sette: Whych Statutes, in the Wordis that thay weryn ther Shewyd, is none harme thegh y expresse ham here:—

[CHAPTER XXVIII.]

IN the yere of oure lord-is incarnacyon M^t. Clxxij, the fryste yere that the kyng of En[g]land, henry, Irland conquerid², Crystyn, Byschope of Lysmore, and Legate of the Courte of Rome; Dougher, Archebyschope of Cassel; Laurance, Arcebishope of Deuelyn; Cathel, Arcebyschope of connaght; with othyr Byschopis, abbotis, pryorys, and many othyr prelatys of holy church in Irland, by the same kyngys comaundement comyn to-geddre in the Cee of Casshel; and, for the State of holy church to bryng into bettyr state, heldyn ther har consayle. to this Consayle comyn thes frome the kyng, that is to say: a nobyl-man Rolfe, Abbote of byldewais; Ralfe, Archedekyn of landaf; Nycol the Preste, and othyr many of the kyngys clerkys and his messagers // The Statutes or constytuciones of that consayle ben this her writtyn, And by the kynges auctorite Stabelid³ // The fryst is, that crystyn men In Irland sholde lewe j^m. har kynnys-women, whych thay haue ar this holde to har will out of Spoushode, and lawfully spouce othyr women, * and Spoushode Lawfully Holde // The Seconde is, that the chyldryn at the church dore sholde be y-primseined of the prestes honde, and in the holy fantstonys in hare modyr chyrchis to be yfullid. The thyrde, that

Capitulum
xxvij^m.tam enor-
mitatibus
quam
spurcitiis.Statuta
Cassellen-
sia.¹ quae ad-
huc extant.Capitulum
xxvij^m.Catholicus
Tuotue-
nensis (Co-
nactensis,
Harl. 177).Nicolaus
capellanus.cognata-
rum et
affinium.[*Fol. 13
b.]² conquesid, MS.

A. D. 1171-2. that euery crysten man lawfullych pay hys tethynges to hys parochy chyrche, of corne & of al otheṛ thyng that a yeṛ hym
 3. Tithes to be paid. aneweth¹. ¶ The ferthe, that al þe londes of holy chyrche & haṛ
 4. Church lands to be left in peace. possessiouns, of al herthly askyng be quyte; & namely, that no 4 kynges ne other heye men, ne heṛ sonnes, ne heṛ meygnees, mette ne herbrowe yn chyrche londes, ne ask, ne wyth streynth ne be so hardy to take; & that Cursed me[te] that four syth a yeṛ was wonet to be asked yṇ chyrche tounes, & of the next neighbors, neuer eft 8
 5. Clergy not to pay any of kinsmens fines for Manslaughter. be asked. ¶ The fyft, that of manslaghttre that lewed men doth, whan man maketh fyṇ wīth hys fomaṇ, the clerkes that ben hys kynnes-meṇ, no þyng ne yeue ne yeld ther-to; bot, as thay beṇ gyltles of the dede, also be thay harmles of þe payement. ¶ The 12
 6. Wills to be made openly. Property to go to family in thirds, or halves. syxth, that whaṇ a man ys seke, he shal make testament openly to-foṛ hys prestes of the parorch, & to-fore hys neighbors; & after hys dettes & seruauentes hyre out take, dele hys catel a thre; yf he hath wyf & chyldreṇ, that on to hys spoused wyf, that other 16
 7. As to funeral services. to hys shyldreṇ, The thryde to hys testament. And yf he hath non chyldren by spouse, the good be y-deled bytwene hym & hys wyf, euery Ilyche; & yf the wyf deyeth, the goodes be I-deleth a thre bytwene the housbond, & the chyldren, & the wyf. ¶ The 20
 8. All folk to go oft to Church. All Seruices to be in the English way. .vij. that whaṇ a man otheṛ a woman deyeth, haṛ wathe², & the seruyce of holy chyrche, & the buryng, be man-shyply I-done. ¶ The .viij. that al meṇ & wommen wyrshyppe holy chyrche, & oft go to chyrche; & holy chyrche yṇ al seruyce be gouerned on the 24
 In winter, no ships can get to Ireland. maner that hyt ys yn England. In al these thynges, the kyng ynto the lond come, many defautes weṛ yn the land I-found, & mych horynesse or oryble synnes that me ne aght nat to speke of, that—through grace of god, & by the kynges purueyaunce & hys 28 myght—weren amendet, & yn betterṛ wonne I-broȝth. ¶ The prymat of Ardmagh was nat at thys conssaylle, ne thedeṛ myght come, for he wase old Man & feble; Bot he come ther-after to dyuelyṇ, & graunted yn al thyng the kynges purueyaunce. In 32
 that yn al the wyntyr ne myght no shyppe com ouer yn-to Irland.

¹ 16th century side-note: 'the privileges and frydom gyven to the church, and londs ther of.' ² ? mistake for 'wache,' or *th* used for *k*, as on p. 67, l. 4.

euery crystyn man lawfully pay his thethis to his Parashe church, of corne, and of al othyr thynges that a yere hym aneweth // The iiij^e. that al the landis of holy church and har Possessiones of al Erthly askynge be quyte; and namely, that no kynges†, ne othyr hey men, ne her Sones, ne her menyees, mete ne herbrow in church londys, ne aske / ne with streynth ne be So hardy to take; and that Cursed met that foure tymes a yere was wonyd to be askyd in church tounes, and of the nexte neghbores, neuer aftyr to be axed¹.
 The V^e, that of manslaghtre that lewid men doth, whan men makyth fyne with his enemy, the clerkys that ben his kynmys-men, nothyng ne yeue therto; but, as thay ben gyltles‡ of the dede, also thay be harmeles of the pament. The vj^e. that whan a man is seke, he shal make testament opynly, to-for his preste of the parash and to-for his evyncrystynnes and aftyr his dettis and his seruauntes vagis out-take, dele his catelathre. yf he haue wyfe and chyldryn, that on to the Spousyd wyf, that othyr to his chyldryn, the thyrd to his testament. And yf he haue no childe [by] Spouse, the good be y-delid² betwen hym and his wyfe, euery y-lyke. and yf the wyfe deyeth, the good be y-delid at thre², betwene the hosbonde, and the chyldryn, and the wyfe / The vij^e, that whan a man oper woman deyeth, har wache, and the seruyce of holy church³, and the burienge, be wyrchibly done // The viij^e. that al men and women wyrchip holy church, and ofte go to church; and holy church in al seruyce be gouerned on al maner that hit is in England. In al thes thynges, the kyng Into the lond come⁴, many defautes were in the land found, and mych felth or orribil synnys that y ne oght not to Speke of, that,—by the grace of god and by the kynges purueyaunce and his myght—weryn amendid, and in bettyr state broght // The Primat of Ardmagh was not at this consail, ne thedyr myght come, for he was olde man and febill. But he come ther-aftyr to deuelyn, and graunted in al thyng the kynges Purueyaunce⁵. In this tyme was the weddyr so stronge, and the wynd so awayward, that in al the wyntyr ne myght no shipp come ouer Into Irland. the kyng

A. D.

1171-2.

iiij^a.*animalium,**frugum,**ceterarum-**que proven-**tionum.*

[† MS.

nothyng.]

v^e.*quoties**inde cum**inimicis**suis com-**ponunt.*vj^a.

[‡ MS.

gyltles.]

² *inter**ipsum et**liberos**bipartiri**debent.*vij^a.viii^a.³ *et missa-**rum et vigi-**liarum ex-**hibitione.**multimoda**malorum**genera.*⁵ Harl.

177 ends a

chapter

here too,

and leaves

out the

Archbp.'s

white cow.]

¹ et quod de villis ecclesiarum cibus ille detestabilis, qui quater in anno a vicinis comitibus exigitur, de cetero nullatenus exigatur.—*Op.* v. 282.

⁴ †abl. abs.—Nam ante ipsius adventum in Hiberniam.—*Op.* v. 283.

A. D. 1171-2. The kyng went to Watyrford, & abode ther̄ a whyle, & ful mych desyre adde for to hyr tythynges from beyont see. & of the knyghtes that he fond *yn Irland, he drogh̄ to hym sleghly for o coste the beste: as Reymond, Myles de Cogan, wyllyam Masturel, 4 & other, for to make hys part þe strenger̄, & the Erles parte the fobler[so]. ¶ After the myd-lente, come shyppes yn-to Irland, that hard tythynges hym broght, & lydder, bothe out of engeland & out of fraunce, And normande, & other londes; ffor ynto Normandy 8 weren ycome twey cardinalles, from the poppe Alexander y-sent (that oon heght *Albertus*, & that other *Theodynus*), for to serchen & enqueren of the holy martyres deth, seynt Thomas: ryghtful men, as me vnderstond, & to that lawfully y-chosen / natheles thay 12 weren Romayns; & such folweth oft coueytse; & bot the kyng come the rather to ham, the kyngedome of england, & al the londes that he was lord of, sholden be entredytet. & (as me fynd oft ¹, good aduentures comen oft slowly & aloon, bot mesaduentures 16 ne cometh neuer-more aloon;) wyth thay tythynges comen other mychel wers, & of more perylle; ffor the kynges sone, henry, the eldest, whyche he so fayne was about to crowne kyng of England, & other tweyn of hys bretheren, (that througħ yought & foolrede 20 hym folwed, & many drogh̄ to ham, both of england & of beyend þe see,) waren I-swore to-greddē to entre vp-on the kyng, & bynyn hys londes, The whyle that he was yn Irland: & wel may be that hyt was I-purueyed bytween ham, ar he ynto Irland wente. 24

¶ Whan the kyng thys herd, he was ² yn grete anguysshe. sory he was at the begynnyge, þat he, gyltles, was I-retted of the holy mannes deth; sore he was afred̄ that hys londes shold bene I-shent throught that lydder dede of hys sonne; sore hym for- 28 thought, that he the lond of Irland so sone most fore-lete, whyche he hade y-cast for to streynth with castell, & stable yn pees, the next somer that was to comen. Of al thys, he was yn many thoghtes; & spake ther̄-of fyrst to hymself, þer-after to hys men. 32 Aftȳ many redes, he sent some of hys ynto England by-fore hym; & ther̄-after he purueyed how he myght sykyrlychest kepe Irland.

and keep it.

¹ MS. est.² MS. way.

wente to watyrford, and abode ther awhile, and grettely desyr hadd A. D. 1171-2.
 forto hyr thythyngis from be-yont see. And of the knyghtes that
 he found in Irland, he drew to hym wylely for o Purpos, the beste,
 as Reymond; Miles de cogan, Willam Masturel and othyr, forto A. D. 1172.
 make his parte the strongyr, and the Erlis parte the febelier / Aftyr
 the myd-leynte, come shippis into Irland that¹ screwid thythynges naves ad-
 veniunt,
 tam gravi-
 tatis nun-
 ciae, quam
 pravitatatis.
 hym broght / out of England, and out of Fraunce, And Normandye,
 and othyr londes. For into Normandy weryn come two cardynalis,
 from the pope Alexandre Sende,—that one was callid Albert, and
 that othyr Theodoin,—forto serche and e[n]quere of the holy martires
 deth, Seynt Thomas. (ryghtful men, as y-vndyrstode, and to that
 lawfully chose.)² Natheles, they were Romanys; and such * folwyth [* Fol. 13
 b.]
 ofte covetys²; and, But the Kyngē come the Sondyr to Hame³, the
 Kyngdome of England; and al the londys that he was lord of,
 Sholdyn be Entredytd; and (as y fynd ofte, good aduentures comyn
 ofte Slowely and aloon, but mysaduentures ne comyth neuer more
 al-oon,) Wyth thay thythyngys, comyn moche wors, and of moche
 more Pereyl. For the kynges sone henry, the eldyst, whych he So
 fayn was to crowne kyngē of England, and othyr two of his
 bretheryn (that throw youuth and fooly hym folwid; and many drew fratrum
 puerili
 levitate
 secuti,
 pravisimo
 consilio.
 to hame both of England and of beyonde See,) ware Swern to-giddre/
 to Entyr vpon the kyngē and take his landis, The whyle that he
 was in Irland: And hit may wel be, that hit was Purveyed be-twen
 ham, ar he into Irland went // Whan the kyngē this herde, he was in
 grete a[n]gwysche: Sory he was at the begynnyngē, that he, gyltles,
 was yretted of the holy manys deth⁴. Sore he was aferd, that his
 londes sholde ben shente throw that vngoodly dede of his Sonnes.
 Sore hym forthoght, that he the londe of Irland so sone moste leue,
 whych he had Purposid to streynth wyth castelis, and stabil in pees, tam incas-
 tellare
 quam
 firma stabi-
 lire pace.
 the nexte Somer that was to come. Of al this, he was in many
 thoghtys, and spake therof fryst to hym-Selfe, theraftyr to his men.
 And aftyr many consalys, he Send Some of his men into England
 to-for hym; And there-aftyr he Pvrueyd how he myght Svrly kepe
 Irland /

¹ thad, MS.²⁻² sed tamen Romani.—Op. v. 285.⁴ se tanta tam immerito suspicione notari.—Ibid.

A. D. 1172.

Henry II
leaves
Leaders
at Dublin
to keep
Ireland,and sails
from Wex-
ford on
Easter
Monday.
At St.
Davids, in
Wales,a Welsh-
woman
complains
to him,[Fol. 14 b.]
he goes on,and she
appeals
for ven-
geance on
him, to the
stone of
Lechlavar,
the
'speaking
stone'
(prophe-
sied
of by
Merlin
which lies
over a
stream N.
of the
church
yard.As a corpse
was carried
over it, the
stone
spoke.

He left at dyuelyn, the cyte & the contray to kepe,
 & Moryce fytz Geraud, wyth other .xx.^{ti} knyghtes; Robert steuenes-sonne,
 & Moryce fytz Geraud, wyth other .xx.^{ti} at Waterford; hunfrey
 de boun, Robert Bernardesson, & hugh de Gundeuyll wyth .xl.^{ti} 4
 knyghtes; At weysford, wyllyam Al-delines-sonne¹ & phylppe de
 Breuse wyth .xx.^{ti} knyghtes. And a morow after Estre day
 herly, he dydde hym to saylle at Weysford, & arryued at
 seynth dauyes, sone after none. Whan he come a lond, he went 8
 wyth grete deuoccion to the modyr chyrche, as a pylgrymage,
 a-foot, *with* a burdoon yn hys hond. Come the chanons of the
 chyrche ayeyne hym at the whyte yate, & *with* fayr processoun,
with mych reuerence, & *with* mych manshype, hym receyued. As 12
 þe processoun yede a rewe to-for hym, come a walche womman,
 & fel hym to þe feet, & made a myche mone, yn hyre langage,
 of the bysshope of that place. The [kyng] stode, & herd hyr
 [Fol. 14 b.] mone || of an ynterpretour-es mouth that hyt hym told; & for he 16
 he went forth, & dydde hyr no ryght anoon as tho wolde, she smote
 hyr handes to-gyddre, & bytterly began to crye tofore ham Al,
 a walshe langage, "A-wreke vs to-daye, lahlauar! A-wreke our
 kynred & our folke of thys man!" Thy that vnderstode hyr 20
 speche, put hyr away, & fore-bade hyre cryyng; & sho so myche
 the more cryed yn the same manere, & hoped to an old prophecy
 that Merlyn seyde: "The kyng of england that shal wyn Irland
 shal be I-woundet yn Irland of a man *with* a rede hond; & as 24
 he cometh ayeyne by south wales, he shal deye vpon lehlauar:"
 Dat was þe name of a stone, that lay ouer a streme by north the
 chyrche heye of seynt dauyes, yn stydde of a brygge. The stone
 was of Marbel wel fayr, & smothe of mannes geynge, & hadde 28
 .x. feet yn leynth, & .vi. yn brede, & a foot thykke. And ys 'lehlauar,'
 a walshe, as mych to sygge as 'a spekyng stone.' And hyt was
 ytold, that som tyme as me bar a dede body ouer that stone,
 he began to speke; & wyth the spech he claued throught; & yit 32
 the clyft ys I-sene, & yit yn-to thys day me be-bereth no dydde
 body ouer that stone. The kyng come to that stone, & bethoght

¹ Weisfordiae, vero Guillelmo Aldelini filio, Philippo de Hastings, et Philippo de Breusa.—Op. v. 286. [William Fitz-Audeline.]

HE lefte at Deuelyn the Cite and the contray to kepe Hugh de Lacy with xx^{ti}. knyghtes, Robert Steuenes-Sone and Morice fiz-geraud; wyth othyr xx^{ti}.; at Waterford Humfrey de bonn, Robert Barnardes-Sone and Hugh de Gondeuyl, with xl. knyghtes / At Weysford, Willam Aldelines sone and Philip de Bruse, with xx^{ti}. knyghtes. And amorrow, aftyr estyr-day, Erly he did hym to Sayle at Weysford and londid at Seynt dauyes sone aftyr noone. Whan he come alond he went wyth grete deuocion to the modyr church as a Pylgrymage afoote with a safe in hande. Come the chanones of the church ayeynes hym at the white yate; and wyth fayre processiou¹, wyth mych reuerence and wyth mych wirchip, hym reseiwid. And as the Procession yede arew to-for hym, come a Walch woman, and fel to-for his feete, and made mych mone in hyr Speche of the Bischop of that Place. He stod, and herde hyr complaynte of an interpretoure-es mouth that hit hym tolde; and, for he wente forth, and did hyr no ryght anoone as sho wolde, She smote hyr handis togiddy and bittyrlly began to cry to-for ham al in walch Speche: "A-wreke vs to-day, lathlaur! wreke our kynred and our pepil of this man!" Thay that vndyrstode hyr Speche, Put hyr away, and forbade hyr cryyng. She so mych the more cried in the Same maner, and hopid to an olde prophesy that Merlynge sayde²: "The kyng of England that shal conquere Irland [shal be wounded in Ireland of a man³] with a rede hand, and as he comyth ayeyn by South walis, he shal dye vpon lethlaur": that was the name of a stone, that lay ouer a streme⁴ by north the churchey of Seynte dauyes, instyd of a brige. The stone was of marbill, * Wel fayr and smoth of men goyng, and was of x fote in Leynth, and vj in Brede, and O foote thykke. And is 'lethlaur' in walch, as mych to say as 'a spekyng stone': and hit was tolde, that Some tyme that whan ther wase a dede body y-bore ouer that stone, he began to speke; and wyth the speche he clewe throg⁵-out; and yit the clyfte as Seyn. And sithyn on-to this day, thay berryth no ded body ouer that stone. The kyng come to that stone, and bethogh[t]

Capitulum
xxix^m.

A. D. 1172.

Ilugone de
Gunde-
villa.

devoto
peregrin-
antium
more,
pedes,
baculoque
suffultus.

quoniam
jus suum
incon-
tinenti non
est assecutus.

³ ab homine
cum rubra
manu in
Hibernia
vulnera-
tum.

⁴ qui trans
flumen
Aluni . . .
jacens.

[* Fol. 14
a.]

Lapis
loquax

ipso conatu
crepuit
medius.

¹ canonicorum ecclesie processionem . . . invenit.—Op. v. 286.

² alludens illi fictitio vulgari, nec vero Merlini proverbio, quo dici solebat.—Op. v. 287.

⁵ throught, MS.

A. D. 1172. hym of that *prophecy*. & he stode at þe stones end & grymly hyt
 Henry II be-hold ; & awhyle ther-after, boldely yede ouer a good paas. & whan
 walks over the stone, he was ouer, he turned ayeyne to þe stone, & deynously þus seyð :
 and asks ‘ Who ’ll “ Who shal heten-forward beleue *Merlyn* the leyer ? ” A man stode 4
 now be- *per* besyde & herd, & wold, hys thankes, saue þe *prophetes* sawe,
 lieve the *Answard* the kyng & seyð, “ Thou art nat that kyng that shal
 liar *Merlin* ? ’ Irland conquer ; ne *Merlyn* ne speketh nat of the.” Thus the
 kyng went yn-to the chyrch, yn seynt *Andrees* & seynt *dauyes* 8
 He hears *wyrshyppe* I-sette, & herd hys masse of a preste that was I-found
 Mass, and fastyng, as god wold. After masse, he eete hys mete ther, & after
 goes to *Haverford*, metē wente to *hauerford*, than ouer .xl. myle ; ffrom thens he wente
 and *Normandy*. hastyly yn-to englande ; out of enland yn-to *Normandy*, & come 12
 Normandy. to-for þe cardynalls *wit̄h* mych *buxumnesse* at *Custance*. Ther,
 He swears after myche *dalyaunce* & many wordes I-spoke, he excused hym
 that he didn’t slay by othes of þe holye *Martyres* deth, that he was nat by hym I-slaw ;
 Beket, but he does bot he ne for-sok nat that he nas for hym ; & *perfor* he vndretoke 16
 penance, such *penaunce* as holy chyrche hym wold loke. Þe cardynals, he
 sent ayeyne wyth myche *wyrshyppe* ; & noon he went to þe *marche*,
 & ther he spake *wit̄h* the kyng of *ffraunce*. *per*, (throḡh *besechyng*e
 of hegh̄ men, & namely of *phylepe* þe erl of *flaundes*, that from 20
 and makes seynt *James* was ryght than I-come,) the pees was made betwene
 peace with the twey kynges, of the wreth that was betwene ham fōr the
 King *Lewis* of *France*. forseyd *martyres* deth ; ffor-*thy* that þe kyng of *ffraunce*, *wit̄h*
 of *France*. othēr mychel & myghty men, name an hand to the *erchebysshopp* 24
 whan he shold turne ayeyne yn-to England, [*ayeyn*] the pees
 between the kyng & hym. ffor *per* was pees thus y-made betwene
 the kynges, al the harme þat the sones *wit̄h* hār allyees hadden
 throught to do, was I-lost tyl þe next yere thērafter. 28

[CHAPTER XXX.]

[Fol. 15 a.] Wnder this, as the lond of Irland was yn good pees
 vnder ham that weren In leste, the lond for to kepe,
 byfelle that a day of *parlement*, at a certeyne place, was betaken
 by-twene *hugh̄ de lacy*, whom the kyng had I-yeue dyuelyn to 32
 kepe *wit̄h* trust, And þe kyng of *Myth*. a nythe, whan the
parlement shold ben a morow, a knygh[t] that was *Moryce* fytz
 Hugh de *Geraudes* newew, & *Robert Gryffyn* by name, thought yn hys
 Laci and *meeth*,
 O’Rourke, King of
 Meath,
 meet.

hym of that prophesy, and he stod at the stone his ende, and grymly hit be-helde; and a whyle ther-aftyr, boldely yede ouer a good pace. *and* whan he was ouer, he turnyd ayeyne to the stone, *and* deynously thus sayde: "Who shal, fro this forth, beleue Merlynge the lyer?" A man stode ther bysyd, and herde, *and* wolde, his thanks, Sawe the prophet-is Saynge, Answerid the kyng and Sayde, "Ye ben not that kyng that shal Irland conquere, ne Merlyng Spekyth not of yow" / Thus the kyng went into the church of Seynt Androwis and seynte dauyes, and herde his masse of a preste that was founde fastyng, as god wolde. Aftyr masse he ette his mette and aftyr mette went to hauerford than othyr xv myle. Frome thens he went forth hastely Into England, out of England into Normandy and come to-for the cardynals with mych buxumnesse at Custaunce. Ther, aftyr mych delyaunce *and* many wordys spoke, he excusid hym by othys of the holy martyris deth that he was not by hym Slayn, but he forsoke not that he was for hym. And ther-for he vndyrtoke such Penaunce as holy church wolde hym enyōyn. the Cardynalls, he sende ayeyn with mych wirchip; and anoone he went to the marche, *and* there he spake wyth the kyng of Fraunce. There, (throgh besechyng of good men, *and* namely of Phylippe the Erle of Flandris, that frome Seynt Iamys was than come,) the Pees was made between the two kynges, of the wreth that was between ham for the forsaid martires deth; ¹ For-they that the kyng of Fraunce, with othyr mychel men *and* myghty / And vndyrtoke to the archebischope, whan he shold turne Into Englan, ayeyn the pees be-twen the kyng *and* hym. For ther was Pees thus made between the kynges, al the harme that the Sonnes, with hare allyences, haddyn thocht to do, was left til the nexte yere ther-Aftyr.

A.D. 1172.

*verbum hoc indignanter emisit.**quasi per miliaria duodecim abinle distans.**ad marchiam cum Francorum rege Lodovico . . .**¹ puta quem Anglorum rex archiepiscopi in Angliam reddituro . . . fideiussorem donaverat.*

[CHAPTER XXX.]

VNdyr this, as the lond of Irland was in good pees vndyr ham that weryn lefte, the londe for-to kepe, by-fel on a day, that a certayn Place, to a parlement was sette, be-twen Hugh de Lacy, to whom the kyng had yewe Deuelyn to kepe wyth truste, and the kyng of myth. On a nyght, whan the Parlement sholde ben amorrow, a knyght, that was Morice fiz-geraudes eme, *and* Robert Gryffyn by name, thocht in his

Capitulum xxx^m.*et regem monoculum Ororicium Medensem.*

A. D. 1172. slepe that he saw a mych flote of wylde swyne yernynge vp-on
 Griffith hugh & moryce; & a boore amonge ham, myche & grysly ouer al
 Fitz- otheṛ, come toward ham, & with hys tuskes wold haue smytten
 Gerald's dream: he hañd & I-slawe, yf he stalwarthly ne had y-come betwene, & 4
 saves
 De Laci, & I-slawe the bore, & I-holpe ham bothe. A morow, thay went to þe
 Maurice place ther þe parlement was I-sette, at a place that me hath seth
 Fitz- y-cleped 'rorykes hylle': ffyrst thay helden har parlement from
 Gerald. ferṛ, by messagers goynge betweñ; theṛ-after thay name sekernesse 8
 The inter- of othes I-sworne, & comen to-geddre by forward; natheles few,
 view is at & ylych fale on ether halue, and thay vnwepened,—bot the one, her
 Rorik's swerdes; & the otheṛ, heṛ sparthes,—& ether of har folke somdel
 Hill. fer from ham. Gryffyn, that with Moryce was to the parlement 12
 Griffith keeps seven I-come, was ful thought-ful of the vysyoñ that he sawe. he name
 trusty knights to hym seuyñ knyghtes of hys owne kyn, than that ho moost
 near. truste to har stalwardnesse, & drowen ham on the on halfe of
 the hylle, as neyght as thay myght leppen vpon har stedes, with 16
 sheldes about haṛ nekkes, & speres an-hond; & for a coste,
 pleneden & prykkeden har hors ayeyñ other, so that, yn whych
 halue the parlement turned, throught encheson of such pley thay
 myght be fonden Redy. Roryk & hugh helden haṛ parlement 20
 of many thyng; bot of nothyng; thay myght nat accord, & begyn
 to departe a wrethe. The traytour Roryk had yn hys thoght þe
 O'Rourke traysoñ þat he hadde I-purueyed. he made semblant, & draw hym
 treacher- by-halues as for to pyssen, & made tokens to hys men that thay 24
 ously at- attacks De hastely shold come to hym. Whan he thys hadde I-done, he
 Laci. turned ayeyne wyth hys sparthe an hegh, hys wysage al blak with
 Maurice ful snel goynge. Moryce was Iwarned of hys neuue, of the
 Fitz- vysyoñ that he sawe; stod, & beheld al thys. he hent out þe 28
 Gerald swerd, & cryed vpon hugh, & mynyed hym, & dyd hym-self ayeyne
 warns De the traytour, for to defend hym. The traytour ran to hugh, hym
 Laci, for to smyte; har latymer yed betwene hym & the dynt; & he
 who is smote hym of the oon arme, fast by the sholdre. Moryce stode, & 32
 saved by his inter- campled wyth hys swerd ayeyne the sparthe, & lowd cryed to har
 preter, and men. & ar hugh myght be yn any state, hym-self foṛ to helpe,
 [¶ Fol. 15 through grete hastyng; he felle twys || abak; & vnnethe, through
 b.] helpe of Moryce, that hym defendet thus, Hugh escaped wyth hys 36
 escapes alive.

Slepe that he Saw a mych flote of wylde Swyn yernynge vpon Hugh and Morice; and a bore amonge ham, mych and grymly ouer al other, come to ham, and wyth his tuskys wolde haue smytten ham Slayn, yf he boldely ne had come betwene, and Slayne * the Boore, and Holpyd Hame Both. On the morrow, they Went to the Place ther the Parlement was sette, at a place that Sedyn is callid "Rorike-is hille." Fryste thay heldyn har Parlement from fere, by messageres goynge betwen; ther-aftyr thay toke Surtey, and othis Sware, and comyn to-giddyr aftyrward. Natheles fewe, and ylyke many on euery syde, and thay vnwepenyd,—but the on, her Swerdys; the othyr, her Sparthes,—and her fellechip in euery syde fere fro ham. Gryffyn, that wyth Moryce come to the Parlement, was ful thoughtful of the vysion that he Saw; he name to hym Sewyn knyghtis of his owyn kyn, tham that he most truste to har bolthenys, and drowen ham on the one halfe of the hille / as neye as thay myght, Leppen vpon har stedes, with sheldis about har nekkes, and Sperres in honde, and for oo Purpos pleydyn and prikkedyn in the felde ayeyne othyr, So that in what syde the Parlement turnedyn, throug encheyson of Suche Pley, thay myght be foundyn redy. Rourik and Hugh kepten har Parlement of many thyngis; but in nothyng they myght acorde, and begon to de-Pert, as in wrethe. The traytoure Rourik had in his thocht / the trayson that he hadd Purueyed: he made semblant, and drow hym be-sydis as forto Pissyn, and made tokyn to his men that thay hastely sholde come to hym. Whan he this had done, he turned ayeyne with his sparthe an hey, his face al blake with ful snel goynge. Morice was warnyd of his eme by the vysyon that he sawe; stode, and be-helde al this. he toke out his Swerde, and cried vpon Hugh, and mynyd hym, and did hym-Selfe agayn the traytoure, forto defende hym. The traytoure rane agayn hugh, hym forto smyte. har latymer yed betwen hym and the stroke; and he smote of hym the oone harme of, fast by the shuldyr. Morice stode, and camplid with his Swerde ayene the Sparthe¹, and loude cried to har men. And ar hugh myght be in any state², hym-Selfe forto helpe, throug grete hastyng, he feltwies a-bac; and vnneth, throug helpe of Morice, that hym defendid

*horribilem
et grandem
prae aliis.*

[*Fol. 14
b.]

*praeter
hinc gla-
dios lun-
tum, inde
secures.*

*ex indus-
tria torna-
mentis
Gallicis
praeludia
faciebant*

*simulans
ad min-
gendum.
vultu
pallido.*

*prae-
muniens et
suscitans.
viri inter-
pretis . . .
letali
vulnere
brachium
amputavit.
¹ contra
securim
gladio
constigebat.*

² staste, MS.

A.D. 1172. lyf. The whyll that thys was, Rorykes men ful many come to hys clepyng, out of dales & wodes about, yernynge to ham wyth speres & *wyth* sparthes, for to brynge hugh & Moryce out of dawes. Than Gryffyn & hys felewes comēd yernynge vp on har 4
 O'Rourke hors styffly to ham. þe traytoure saw ham comynge, & lep to hors that to hym was broght, & wold do hym to flyght; & as he lepe, vp come Gryffyð, & wyth hys spere smote hym & hys hors throught, & slowe hem bothe. Wyth hym weð I-slayne þay that, yn so 8
 is slain by Maurice Fitz-Gerald. mych perylle, the hors hym broght; & hy[s] heed I-smytten of, & yn-to england *per*-after to the kyng I-sent; & al hys men yn-to al the felde dyscomfyte, & I-slawe ful many. Rolf, Robertes sone fytz Stephen, was the other stalwardthest that daye yn the felde¹. 12

[CHAPTER XXXI.]

[Fol.16 a.] Maurice was a mane ful wyrshyful & chamfaste; vysage wel colowred; becomlyche; lytel of body, sumdele more pan lytel, & lasse than metlych. of hert, & body, wel I-thewed; nothyng hauteyne. of k[i]ndly goodnes, he was good; & leuer 16
 Maurice Fitz-Gerald described. hym was be good, thað be sey good; hys maner was euer-more to hold hym methelyche. man of short spech & lytel, bot of fayr wordes, as he that more hadde yn hert than yn mouth, more of wytte & reyson þan of spech. ² Nat forthy³, whan tyme was, & nede 20
 He spoke little, to sp[e]ken, to good reyson forth brynge,—as lettred as he was, as wytty he was². In thyng that byfell to bataylle, swyth hardy, & vnnethes of stalwarthnesse any was hys bettre; natheles, of perille to take, he was nat to hastyf ne to fool-hardy. bot as he was 24
 was very bold, but not fool-hardy, thus, & of *purueaunce* thyng to begynne, Also he was stronge & stydfast yn thyng Whað he hyt hadde begune. he was sobre, wel I-thewed & chaste, lawful, & stydfast, *wit*hout blame.
 was strong and stedfast.

A.D. 1173.

[CHAPTER XXXII.]

In April, Henry II's three sons, In the next aurið theð-after, þe yonger kyng henry, þe 28
 kynges sone, the lyddernysse that he hadde I-thought to hys

¹ The twelve lines on the back of fol. 15, 'a bak (p. 74, at foot) . . . felde,' were first written by mistake on fol. 16, but afterwards struck out.

²⁻² Et tamen, cum sermonem res exigebat, ad sententiam dicendam sicut serus, sic scientissimus.—*Op.* v. 297. ³ ? MS. Rat fortly.

thus, Escapid wyth his lyfe. the whyle that this was, Rourik his A. D. 1172.
 men, ful many, come to his callynge, out of dalis and woddis about,
 rynnynge to ham *with Speres* and^r Sparthes, forto berew hugh *and* *cum jaculis*
 Morice the lyfe. Than gryffyn and his fellowys come rynnynge *binis et*
 vpon har hors styfly to ham. the traytoure Saw ham comynge, *securibus*
and lep to hors that to hym was broght, *and* wolde do hym to *amplis.*
 flyght / And as he lep, vp come gryffyn, *and* wyth his spere
 smote hym *and* his hors throught-out, *and* slayne them both. wyth *cum ipso,*
 hym were Slayn thay that, in so myche Peril, the hors hym broght / *tribus ejus-*
 and his hed Smytten of / *and* into England theraftyr to the *dem fami-*
 kynge hit sende; and al his men into al the feldis discomfite, and *liaribus.*
 Slayn ful many / Rolfe, Robert-is Sone, fiz-Steuyñ, was the othyr
 boldyste that day in the felde.

[CHAPTER XXXI.]

MOrice was a man ful wyrehipphul *and* shamefaste; ¹ vysage Capitulum
 wel colorid; becomlych; lytil of body, sume-whate more xxxij^m.
 than lytel *and* lasse than metlych. of herte and body, wel thewed; Descriptio
 nothyng couetyng. of * Kyndely goodnes, He was good ¹; *and* Maurici fiz-
 Leuer hit Was to Hym to Be good, than to Be sayde good. his geraud.
 maner was euer-more to holde hym methelyche. man of Shorte [*Fol. 15
 Speche *and* lytyll, but of Fayre wordis, as he that more had in a.]
 herte than in mouthe, more of witte and Reyson than of speche. *plus pec-*
 Nat forthy, whan tyme was, and nede to Spekyng, to good reyson *toris ha-*
 forth bryngge,—as letterid as he was, as witty he was. In thyng that *bens quam*
 befel to battayl, Swyth hardy. But as he was thus, *and* of *oris, plus*
 Purueyance, thyngge to begyn, Also he was stronge *and* stydfast *rationis*
 in thyngge whan he hit hadd begonne. ² he was sobyr, wel *quam ora-*
 condicionyd *and* chaste, lawful and stidfaste, wyth-out blame ² / *tionis, plus*
sapientiae
quam elo-
quentiae.

[CHAPTER XXXII.]

A. D. 1173.

IN the nexte Aurel ther-aftyr, the yongyr kynge henry, the Capitulum
 kynges Sonne, the Wickidnys that he had thocht to his xxxij^m.
 fadyr done / nolde no longyr helle, wyth his two bretheryn that

¹⁻¹ vultu colorato, decentique; mediocri quadam modicitate, tam mediocribus minor, quam modicis major; vir tam animo quam corpore modificato, nec illo elato, nec hoc dilutato; innata vir bonitate bonus.—*Op.* v. 297.

²⁻² Vir sobrius, modestus et castus; stabilis, firmus atque fidelis.—*Ibid.*

A.D. 1173. fadyr nold no lenger hellen; *with* hys twey bretheren^d—that ys to wytte, the Erl of peytou & the erl of brytayn¹—wenten to the Henry, Richard and Geofrey, get French help, and rebel. kyng of ffrance, whose doghter he hadde I-spoused, & *purchased* helpe of hym for to weir^r vpon hys fadyr. The encheson^d wher^r-for^r 4 hyt was, Mayster Geraud ne telleth nat, ne I ne can^d nat sey; bot many heg^h & Ryche men he hadde to consaylle & to helpe, both of England & of beyend the see; many openly & wel; most, illy & dernely. Henry II. The old kyng, the yonger kynges fadyr, for^r the fortune 8 that hym come to on^d euery halue so vnwarly, was ful sorowful.

draws most of his men from Ireland. They come to him at Rouen. [+ Fol. 10 b.] He commits Ireland to Earl Striguiland Reimund Fitz-Gerald. ¶ Nathales, throg^h gret sleght & heg^h herth, he made fayr semblant, & heped to god; & on^d euery syde that he myght, yn al maner he besoght help. He sent messagers ynto Irland, & mad come ouer 12 to hym the meste parte of the knyghtes & of the good meygne þat he ther hadde I-lefte. Thay come to hym at the cyte of Ruem, & he bethogh hym that †hyt was perylle to leue har lond vnkepet; ther he betoke þe Erl Rychard al þe lond to kepe, & sette to hym 16 Reymond as hys othe^r hand; ffor the erl for-soke al out & out, þat he that kepyng wold nat receyue, bot yf he hadde Reymond *with* hym for to helpe.

[CHAPTER XXXIII.]

Most Irish, hearing of the Princes' rebellion, turn against Henry II. **T**he Erle [&] Reymond, *with* ha^r power^r, wentten yn-to 20 Irland; &, for the folk of yrland hade y-hard of the mych stryff that was betwene the kyng & hys sonnys be-yent the see,—as folk þat styddefast ys yn vnstedfastnesse, & lawfully ham holt to vnlawfulnesse,—the most parte of the prynces of þe lond, ayeyn 24 har trowth I-found, þay turned ayeyn-to the kyng. The erl hadde sone I-spend the traysour^r that he broght ouer wyth hym; & whan the meygne lacked spendyng, & nat spedden yn prayes takyng vnder heruy, that was conestable ouer the meygne, & euer hadde 28 enuy to Reymond, Thay wenten^d ham to the erl comynly by one accorde, & sey hym wel, that ‘bot yf he wold sete Reymond ouer ham, thay wold leue hym euerychone, & wend yn-to england; oþer, that wel wors was, thay wold turnet to ha^r enemyes ayeyns har 32 heed.’ As the meygne wold, Reymond was I-sette ouer ham; thay name than hert to ham, & wenten vpon the Ofolanes yn the dees,

The English demand to be put under Reimund Fitz-Gerald. They invade Offaly, in Leinster,

¹ Pictaviae scilicet et Britanniae comitibus.—*Op.* v. 297–8.

is to Say, the Erle of Peytoun *and* the Erle of Brytayne, wentyn A.D. 1173-
to the kynge of Fraunce, whose doghtyr he had Spousid; *and* ad Lodo-
Purchasid helpe of hym forto were vpon his fadyr. The encheyson vicum,
wherfore hit was, Maystyr Geraud ne tellyth not / ne I ne can Francorum
not say; but many hey men he hade to consayl and to helpe, regem.
both of England *and* of beyonte see; many opynly *and* wel; multo
[more] falthyr pryuely. The olde kynge, the yongyr kynges fadyr, plures
for the fortvne that to hym was fal on euery syde so vnwytyngly, occulte
was ful Sorroful. Neuer-the-las, by grete Sotylte *and* hey herte, habens, et
he made fayre semblante, *and* trystid to god; *and* on euery syde fautores.
that he myght, in al maner he besoght helpe. he sende messageres
into Irland, *and* made come ouer to hym the meste Parte of the
knyghtes and of the good mennye that he ther lefte. They come
to hym at the Cite of Ruem. *and* he be-thoght hym that hit was ad urbem
Peril to leue har londe vnkepte: ther he be-toke the Erle Richard; Rothoma-
al the londe to kepe, and sette to hym Reymonde as his othyr gensem.
hande; For the Erle forsoke out and out, that he that kepynge custodiam
wolde not rescewe, but yf he hadde Reymond wyth hym, hym illam sus-
for to helpe. cipere
omnino
reuerat.

[CHAPTER XXXIII.]

The Erle and Reymond, *with* har men, wentyn Into Capitulum
Irland; and, for þe Pepil of Irland had herde of the grette xxxiiij^m.
stryfe that was betwene the kyng and his Sonnes be-yount the
See,—as Pepyl that stydfast is in vnstydfastnes, *and* lawfully ham gens sola
holde to vnlawfulnes,—the most Part of the Pryncis of the londe, constans
agayn har trouth y-founde, thay turned agayn the kynge. The incon-
Erle had spende the tresoure that he broght ouer wyth hym; *and* stantia.
whan the fellochipe lackid spendynge, *and* not Speddyn in Prayes-
takeynge, Vndyr heruey, that was constabil ouer the menny, and deficien-
euer had envy to Reymond; They wenten ham to the Erle tibus
comynly by oone acorde, *and* sayde to hym wel, ‘but that he quoque
wolde sette Reymonde ouer ham, thay wolde lewe hym euerichone, stipendiis.
and wende Into Englande; othyr, that wel wors was, thay wolde
turne to har enemys agaynes hame’ / And as the menny desyrid,
Reymonde was sette ouer hame. thay take then herte to ham, in Offelanos
and wenten vp-on the Ofelany in the deseses, and toke grette insur-
gentes.

A. D. 1173. & name grett *prayed*, arrayed ham nobly wyth hors & wepne.
 Lismore, From thens thay wentteid to lysmore, & the cyte, & al þe contre
 &c., and about, robbeden & *prayed*, & by the see wey senten many grete
 take much prey. *prayed* to Watyrford; & of pylfre & thynges that thay namen, thay 4
 fylled .xij. far costes that wereid I-come fro Waterford yn-to the
 The hauen of dongaruame. As thay weid wynd abydynges, theid come
 English fleet fight a þe men of Cork from by west, by the see, yn xxxij shypys, & many
 Cork fleet, men theid-In, for to take thay other. Theid was the fyght styffly 8
 I-yeuen, of these twey fletes yn the see: That oon assaylled that
 other grymlych *with* stones & *with* sparthes; the other wereid
 welle I-wepned, & *with*-stode styffly *with* arblastes & *with* bowes.
 rout it, and At þe end, thay of Corke weren descomfyted & ouer-come; heid 12
 killitsmen, shypys I-take; heid men I-slawe, & I-caste yn the see. Adam de
 and take their prizes herford & phylep de Wellsse, that weren I-sette ouer thay yong-
 to Water-lynges, *with* mo shypes & grete beyetes of wepne & of pylfre, to
 ford. Watyrford wenten *with* grete yoye. Reymund herd speke of thys 16
 Reimund marches, fyght, & tythynges to hym come; he toke *with* hym xx^{ti} knyghtes
 & an hundreth bowmen, & went by the see wey thederward.
 Than come to hym tythynges þat dermot, þe prynce of desmond,
 was, *with* myche hostes, comeid to lysmore, to helpe ham of Cork. 20
 Reymund went hym thederward. Þe prynce that herd, & turned
 Dermot daren't face him. ayeyne, & durst hym nat abyde. And Reymund went fortheid yn-to
 Reimund has 4,000 cattle. the contrey, robbed & *prayed*, so that he hadde *with* hym at hys
 turny[n]ge aye toward Watyrford, four thousand kyne; & as thay 24
 [|| Fol. 17 a.] wer comynges || by narrow weyes wyth har *prayed*, come the Ireshe-
 The Irish take some. men of þe contray, & henten a party of har kyne, & wenten al
 quyttten *with* ham to wodde. þe crye arose, & Reymund¹ (as man
 that euer was formost redy) went aftyr, *with* on priuisant man an 28
 hors wyth hym; come to the woddes ense², theid the theues
 He pursues them into a wood. weren an hydynges. Whan he hadde I-faylled of þe preye, &
 wolde turne ayeyne, hys felewes folyly entyced hym for to wende
 yn-to þe wodde, & he so dydde. Whan thay weren wel *with*-yn, 32

¹ The Latin text gives this exploit to Meiler: Gir. Cambr. *Op.* v. 309-10, 'et in primis Meilerius, ut erat praeceps semper et probus, satellite quodam comitatus equestri, praedones usque ad silvae condensa est persecutus.'

² Ends.

Prayes arrayed ham nobely *with* hors and wepyñ. From thens A.D. 1173.
 thay wentyn to lysmore; * and the Cite and the contrey about, [*Fol. 15
 robbodyn *and* preedyn, *and*, By the See-wey, Sendyne many gret b.]
 prays to waterford; and of pilfre *and* of thyng that thay toke,
 thay fillid^e xiiij^e. farcostes that weryn come from watyrford into naviculas
 the havyn of douñ-garvan. As thay were wynde abydyng ther, tredecim.
 come the men of Corke from be weste, by the See, in xxxij^{ti}. Shippis,
and many men therin, forto take the othyr. ther was the fyght bellicosis
 fressely yewyn of this two fittes in the See. That oone assaylid refertae
 the othyr grymly *with* stones and *with* Sparthis; the othyr wer viris.
 wel wepenyd, *and* wythstod styfly *with* arblastes *and* *with* bowes¹.
 At the Ende, thay of Corke weryn dyscomfyted and ouer-come;
 Her shippis take, her men slayne, *and* caste Into the See. Adam
 de herforde *and* Philippe² the wellsshe, that weryn sette ouer
 thay yonglynges, *with* mo shippes *and* gret begetes of wepyn cum armis
 and of Pylfre, to Watyrford wentyn *with* gret Ioy. Reymond³ et oneribus.
 herde speke of this fight, *and* tythynges to hym come: he toke
with hym xx^{ti}. knyghtes and an hundrid bowmen, *and* went by per mari-
 the see-way thedyrwarde. Than com to hym tythyngis that timam
 Dermot, the prince of desmonde, was *with* myche hostys comyn viam.
 to lysmore, to helpe ham of Corke. Reymonde wentyn hym
 thedyrward: the prince that herde, *and* turned agayn, *and* durst
 hym not abyde. And Reymonde wente Ferdyr Into the³ contrey,
 robbid *and* Prayed, So that he hadd *with* hym at his turnyng
 agayn toward watyrford, iiiij^e. M^l. kyne. and as thay were comyng
 by naroweis wyth har Pray, come the Iryssh-men of the contray, ad silvas
and tokyn a party of har kyne, *and* wentyn al quyte *with* ham to de plano.
 wodde. the cry aros, *and* Reymond, as man that euer was formyst
 redye, went aftyr, *with* one pryuisant man an hors *with* hym, come
 to the woddys syd ther the thewis were an-hydyng. Whan he had
 falid of the pray, *and* wolde haue turne agayne, his fellowis solely juvene in-
 Enticed hym forto wende into the wodd; *and* he so dide. Whan stiquante
 temerario

¹ dum isti lapidibus et securis acriter impetunt, illi verò, tam sagittis quam laminis ferreis quibus abundabant, promptissime resistunt.—Op. v. 309.

² Philippe, MS.

³ the the, MS.

A.D. 1173-4. Reinund is attackt, but cuts his way thro' his foes.

the Irysshe-men ryse to ham on every halue, & leyd ham oñ, & anoõd-ryght the yonge mañ was al to-hakked to-for hym; he yarne to snellych for to socur̄ hym, & was assaylled oñ every halue; & he, as man, hent out the swerd & leyd on about hym, 4 & smot of that mañ the hond, þat other̄ the arme, þe þryd the heede by þe sholdres; thus he opened hym the way, & come out to hys men, & brogħt twey sparthes fast on hys sheld, & thre on hys hors¹; bot all hool & sound, & harmeles of body, he escaped. 8

[CHAPTER XXXIV.]

A.D. 1174.

Reimund goes to Wales. Hervey is made Constable.

Donnell O'Brien slaughters the Dublin men.

The Irish massacre the English.

Whan thys was y-done, & the meygne was noblych arrayed both byl ond & eke by watyṛ, come tythynges to Reymond, that hys fadyṛ Wyllyam fytz Geraud was dede. Reymond went ouere yn-to Walys, to take seysyne yn hys fadyṛ 12 landys; & heruy was the whyle eft² y-made conestable of þe meygne: he wold fayne entremette hym to do some thyng the whyle that Reymond was out of londe, & made the Erl & the meyne wend to Cassell for to weren yn Monestre; he sent eke 16 after the meyne of dyuelyn to come to ham. And as thay come through Ossery, & laye a nyght yn a place thaṛ thay supposed to be al sykeṛ, Obreen, the kyng of thomone, was sykeṛ, & awayted haṛ comynge by good spies. he aroos with mych folk vpon hem 20 erly a day yn the mcrowenyng, & smot vpon ham vnwyttyngly, & slogh fouṛ knyghtes that wereñ ouer ham, & fouṛ hundred ostmen. Whan the tythynges heṛ-of come to the Erl, he turned ayeyne to Waterford with mych shame, & held hym thaṛ as man 24 that was beseget, that he cam nat fro thennes. And for thys aduentuṛ, the folk of Irland wyth oo hert al to-gyddre aresen vpon the englysshe, & slow ham yn-to al theṛ thay myght ham fynd. The kyng of Connaght come eke ouer the shynen yn-to Myd, 28 & fond al þe castels wast & voyde; he brant & keste ham adoun to ground, tyl he come ryght to dyuelyñ. The Erl saw þat he was narrow by-ladde: by consaylle of hys men, as the last remedy of lyue, he sent hys lettres to Reymond ouer yn-to Walys, yn these 32

¹ tres secures Hibernicas in equo confixas, duasque in clipeo portans.—Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 310.

² MS. est.

they wer *with*-In the Irysh-men rysse to ham on euery halue *and* leyde on ham, *and* anoone the yonge man was al to-hackid to-for hym. He rane forto socoure hym, *and* was assaylid on euery syde. And he, as man, toke out his Swerde, *and* leyde on aboute hym, *and* Smote of, that man the honde, that othyr the harme, the thyrd the hede by the sholdris; thus he oppenyd the wey, *and* come out to his men, and broght two Spares faste on his shelde, and thre on his hors; but al holde and Sounde *and* harmeles of body he Escapid.

A.D.
1173-4.*exserto
gladio,
viam sibi
vir ani-
mosus viri-
bus ape-
ruit.*

[CHAPTER XXXIV.]

A.D. 1174.

Whan this was done, *and* the meyne was nobely arrayed both by londe *and* also by watyr / come thythyngis to Reymonde, that his Fadyr willam fiz-geraude was dede. Reymond wente ouer into Walis, to take seysyne in his Fadyr landis; And heruey that tyme was made constabil of the meny. he wolde fayn entremitte hym to done sumthyng, the whyle that Reymonde was out of londe; *and* made the Erle *and* meny wende to cassell forto werryng in monestre. He sende also aftyr the meny of deuelyn to come to ham. And As thay come throgh Ossory, *and* lay a-nyght in a place thar thay demyd to be al Sure, Obreen, the kynge of Thomonde, was Sure, *and* awayted here * comynge By good Spies. He aroose, *with* mych Pepil, vppon Hame, erly a day in the mornynge, *and* Smote vppon ham vn-wittyngly, *and* killid iiije. knyghtis *and* weryn ouer hame, *and* CCCC men. Whan the thythynges herof come to the Erle, he turned agayne to Watyrford *with* mych shame, *and* helde hym ther as man that was besegid, that he came not fro thennes. And for this aduenture, the Pepil of Irland *with* oo herte al-to-giddy aysen vpon the Englysh, *and* Slowen ham in al places that thay ham myght fynde // The kynge of Connaght come also ouer the shynnyñ into Myth, *and* found al the Castelis waste *and* woyle. he braunt and keste ham doune to grounde, til he come ryght to Deuelyn. The Erle Saw that he was narrow bylad: by consail of his men, as the laste remedy of lyue, he sende his lettres to Reymond, ouer into Walis, in thes wordis: "As rath as

Capitulum
xxxiiij^m.*aliquid
agere
videretur.*[*Fol. 16
a.]*qui aliis
praeerant.**unanimiter
insurgunt.**in arcto
jam posi-
tum.*

A.D. 1174. wordes: "As rathe as thou hast I-sey these *lettres*, ne leue nat to
 Striguil asks Reimund's help, and promises him his sister Basile. come to *socour* vs wyth good myght: & thy desyr of basyle, my
 sustre, lawfully for to spouse, anone at py comynge, wythout faylle
 thou shalt haue." Whan Reymond hadde thys I-herd, both for the 4
 maydnes loue þat he so longe hadde desyred, & for to proue hys
 stalwardnesse, & socoūr hys lord yn hys mychele nede, wyth Meylēr,
 hys emes sone, he dyght hym al þat he myght yn such hast, so
 that he hadde thretty || knyghtes of hys owne kyn, & thre hundred 8
 bowmen, the choyse of al Wales: he put hym to saylle, & arruyed at
 Weysford yn fyftene shyppes. That same tyme, the men of Weysford
 hadden I-purueyed ham to vndo al þe englysshe, whēr-so me myght
 ham fynde. Whan thay sawe the shyppes comynge yn þe hauȳn, & 12
 baneres that thay wel knowe; þroght þat comynge so fersly, that
 traysōn was y-lefte; & anōn Reymond went wyth hys men to
 Waterford, & broght thens the Erl stalwarthly to Weysford.
 fressel, that was kepēr of Waterford, went after the Erl by þe 16
 water of Sur, yn botys with hys men; & as þay wēr yn the watȳr,
 the lydder gyddes that hym shold lode¹, slowe hy[m] & al hys men,
 & turned ayeyne to the Cyte, & gadered ham to-gedder al þe
 Irysshe-men, & smyt vpōn þe englesshe, & slowe al that thay 20
 myght fynd yn hous & yn wey, men & wommen, yonge & old,
 without any sparynge, saue thay that escaped yn-to Rathe-
 vyldestoūr; & throgh ham was the toun I-saued, tyl the traytours
 þer-after come to pees, & euer ther-after the lasse beleued & loued. 24
 Reymond, whan he hadde thys I-se[u]yd the Erl, he miniyed the
 Erl of hys behest. The Erl sent anōn to dyuelȳn aftyr hys
 suster̄, and went neuer from Weysford, fort sho was with mych
 wyrshyppe I-spoused to Reymond. Whan he was I-spoused, & 28
 al þe day was Ihold yn yoy, gladnesse, & mych plente of mete
 & drynke, & the nyght aftyr, yn delytes of chambre as ham beste
 lyked, came tythynges that Oconghoūr, kyng of Connaght,
 hadde I-destrued al myght, & was I-come wyth myche power̄ 32
 yn-to the contrey of dyuelȳn. Reymond was nat slowe, nether̄
 fōr loue of hys faȳr wyf ne for the moche feste, bot anōn
 a morowe he toke hys mēn wyth hym, & went toward dyuelȳn.

¹ for lede.

ye haue sey thes *lettres*, ne lette not to come to socoure vs with
 good myght: *and* youre desyre of Basyle my Sustre, lawefully forto
 Spouse, anone at youre comynge, *with-out* fayl ye shall haue" // A.D. 1174.
et desiderium tuum,
in Basilia sorore mea
tibi legitime
copulanda.
 Whan Reymond hadd this herde, both for the maydes lowe that he
 so longe had desiryd, *and* forto prow his myght, *and* socoure his
 lorde in his mychel nede, *with* Meyler, his emys sone, he dight hym
 al that he myght in such haste, so that he myght haue / *and*
 hadde xxx^{ti}. knyghtes of his owyn kyne, *and* CCC bowmen, the coyse de electa
Kambriæ
juventute.
 of al Walis. he putte hym to sayle, *and* arryued at Weysforde in
 xv. shippis. that same tyme, þe men of Weysforde hadd Purveyed
 ham to vndo al the Englysh, wherso thay myght ham fynde.
 Whan thay Saue the chippis comynge Into hawyn, and baneres
 that thay wel knew; throw that comynge So Fresly, that trayson adventu
tam subito.
 was lefte; and anoone Reymonde went wyth his men to watyrforde,
and broght thens the erle boldely to Weysforde. Fresell, that was Fretellus,
 keper of watyrforde, wente by the watyr of Sure in botis *with* his custos.
 men; and, as they were in the watyr, the liddyrd gides that hym ab iniquis
Ostmannis.
 Sholde lede, slayne hym *and* al his men, *and* turned agayn to the
 Cite, *and* gaddrid ham to-geddyr al the Irysh-men, *and* smyte
 vpon the Englysh-men, *and* slayne al thay that thay myght fynde
 in hous, in wey, men *and* women, yonge *and* olde, *with-out* any in plateis
et domibus.
 sparynge, Saue thay that Escapid into Rathevyldestoure; *and*
 throgh ham was the touñe Sawid, tyl the traytours ther-aftyr
 come to Pees, *and* euer ther-aftyr the lasse belewid *and* lowid. /
 Reymond, when he hadd thus I-Sawid the Erle, he mvnyed the
 Erle of his promes. the erle sende anoone to deuelyn aftyr his revocatam
a Dublinia
Basiliam,
 suster; *and* Wente neuer frome Weysforde till that she was, *with*
 myche wyrchipp, Spousid to Reymonde. Whan he was spousid,
 and al the day was holde in Ioy *and* gladnys, *and* mych Plente
 of mette and drynke, and the nyght aftyr in delytes of chambyr, in thalami
deliciis
nocte con-
sumpta.
 as ham beste plesyde / Came tythyngis that o-conghoure, kyng of
 Connaght, hadd destrued al Myth, *and* was come *with* grete hoste
 into the contrey of Deuelyn. Reymond was not Slow, nethyr for
 lowe of his fayre wyffe, ne * for the moche feste; But amorrow He
 toke His men *With* Hym, *and* Went towarde Deuelyn. O-con- nec vino,
nec venere,
retardatur.
[*Fol. 16
b.]

A.D. 1174. Oconghouŕ hadde *per-to-forne* assayed hys mayne, y-douted hym
 O'Conor the more; he ne abode nat wyth hym, bot was gladdē to take
 retires. homward. Reymund let restore & arere that was destrued throug
 Reimund rebuilds his Castles and restores peace. *pe werē*, & fale castels ryght vp, & broght yn-to rather state; 4
 & for dred of hym, the lond wax yn good pees a good whyle, that
 none Iresshe-maṅ ne durst hym styrre, wer to begynne.

[CHAPTER XXXV.]

A.D. 1173-4. **T**his while the kyngē was yn mych stryf, wel two yer,
 ayeyṅ hys thre sonnes & haŕ allyes, both yn englande 8
 & yn normandy & garioigne; & so was I-peyned with trauaylle
 yn wepne & wakyngē nyght & day, that no man ne myght more.
 Bot, for ne wors fomanne may be, paṅ thay that maṅ moste
 trusteth to, o thyngē was, that meste tene hym dydde: that *pe* 12
 knyghtes that he hadde I-chose, hys body to kepe, yn whose
 hondes hys lyf & hys deth he be-taght, for the moste dele *euery*
 nyght wenten to hys sones pryuely; so that, whan the kyngē
 oft-tymes asked aftyŕ ham, thay war nat I-founde. Natheles, the 16
 bataylle that was of so dotous begynnyge, hadde so good endyngē
 that, for the vnryght that hys sonnes hym dedde so vnk[i]ndely,
 hyt semete better tha[t] he sought by power of god, than by erthly 20
 power; ffor yn al places, the *ouerhand* was hys. And as hyt semete
 fyrste that hyt was for wreth of seynth Thomas-es deth that *pat*
 vnhape hym || betydde, Also hyt semed *per-aftyŕ*, Whan he
 hadde I-done asseth to holy chyrche, & pees made wyth the
 holy martyr, wyth teres & repentaunce of herte, al hys tene, 24
 throught goodys helpe, hym turned to gladnesse: ffor aftyŕ the
 mych tene & traysonṅ *pat* he hadde Itholled al two yer, at *pe*
 laste was *pe* bataylle I-smyttenṅ, at the whych, betwen the twey 28
 ostes, Ther war the kynges sonnes dyscomfyt, progh Rauf de
 Glanuyll, that was mayster of *pe* kynges hoste. Ther was I-take
pe kyngē of scotland, & *pe* erl of shestre, & *pe* erl of leycestre,
 & so fele gret men, bothe of england & of beyent see, that vnnethe
 me fond *prisons* to ham. Theŕ, aftyŕ al *pe* trauayll *pat* *pe* kyngē 32
 hadde, & *pe* enuy, & *pe* costes al two yer, come *pe* sonnes to *pe*
 fadyres pees, & maden asseth, falsly, as hyt was *per-aftyŕ* wel
 Ishewed yn deede. Of þus vntrowth, spake Merlyn yn hys

The worst was, that his trusted Body-guard deserted to his rebel sons.

But he won all fights,

[||Fol. 18 a.]

by God's help.

His sons were routed, and

obliged to make peace (a false one).

ghoure had thertofoꝛ assayed his meny, *and* douted hym the more. A. D. 1174.
 he wolde not abyde hym, but was glade to take homwarde. et castris
Mediæ...
dirutis...
 Reymonde lette restore and arere that was destruced by the werre;
 And fale casteles ryght vpe, and broght into radyr state. *and* for jam repa-
ratis et in
statum
redactis.
 dred of hym, the londe wax in good pees a goode whyle, that none
 Irysh-man ne durst hym not styre, werre to begynne.

[CHAPTER XXXV.]

This whyle the kyng was in myche stryfe, wel two yere,
 agayn his Sonnes *and* har allience, both in Englande and in
 Normandy, *and* gascoygne; *and* So was peyned with trawail in
 wepyn, nyght and day, that no man ne myght more. But, for no
 wors enemy may none be, than thay that a man trusteth moste to,
 O thyng was, that most angyr hym didd: that the knyghtes that he
 hadd chose his body to kepe, in Whos handis his lyfe and his deth
 he betoke, for the mor Party, euery nyght wentyn to his Sones
 priuely; So that, whan the kyng ofte-tymys askyd aftyr hame, thay
 were not founde. Natheles, the battayll that was of So doutos
 begynnynge, hadd So good Endynge that, for the vnryght that his
 Sones hym didde so vnkyndely, hit Semyd bettyr that he fought by
 Powerē of god, than by Erthely Powerē. For in al Placys, the ouer-
 hande was his. And as hit Semyd fryst, that hit was for wrethe of
 Seynte Thomas-es deth that that vnhape hym befell, Also hit
 semyd ther-aftyr, whan he hadd dōne asseth to holy churchē, *and*
 pees made with the hooly martyr, with terys and repentaunce of
 herte, al his tene (by godys helpe) hym turned to gladnys. For
 aftyr the mych tene and trayson that he hadd sufferid al two yere,
 At the laste, was the battayll Smytten, at the whyche, be-twen the
 two hostys, Ther were the kynges Sonnes dyscomfyte, by Ralfe de
 Glanvil, that was Maystyr of the kynges hoste. Ther was take
 the kyng of Scotlande, and the Erle of Chestre, and the Erle of
 leycestre, and So many grete men, both of England *and* of beyonte
 See, that vnneth thay found prisonys to ham. Ther, aftyr al the
 trauail that the kyng hadde, and the Envy, and the costys al two
 yere, come the Sonnes to the faderis Pees, *and* madyn asseth, falsly,
 as hit was ther-aftyr wel Shewid in dede. Of this vntrouth, Spake
illi quoque
quos cu-
bicularios
sibi milites
elegerat.
A. D.
1173-4.
Capitulum
xxxv^m.
propiti-
ante nobili
martyre
Thoma,
lacrimis et
devotione
jam pla-
cato.
umbratili-
que magis
quam vera
concordia.

Merlin of Celidon's prophecy of the Rebellion of Henry II's sons. prophecyes, & seyde: "The sonnes shullen agylte ayeyn þe fadyr for hys gyltes, & the rather gylte shal be enchesoð of þe gyltes þat after shullen comen. The sonnes shullen aryse vpon þe fadyr; & for to awreke hys felonye ayeyne þe wombe, the tharmes shal swer ham togydde. In the man of blode, the blode shall aryse, & wanhoply shal hys pynsyng be, tyl that scotland þe penaunce of hys pylgrymage bewepe."

[CHAPTER XXXVI.]

Henry II had grey eyes, a red face, and a big belly, tho, to lessen it, he'd hardly rest his body. All day he was out hunting, and rode a high trotter; The kyng henry the othe, was¹ a mað saunrede, rounde heed, & round grey eghe; roghly lokyng, & rede yn wreth; vysage rede bernynge, grete speche, neke somdel logh of þe sholdres, brest thyk, armes staluathe, of flesshy body; &, more of kynde than of glotony, grete of wombe; for he was, as to prynce belongeth, [of] mete, & of drynke ful meen & for-beryng²; &, for to a-quenche that gretnesse, he put hymself to ful mych trauaylle, that wnneth he lete hys body haue eny reste, ethe by day othe by nyght; ffor, wynter, & somer, he arose euer more yn the dawnynge, & herd fyrst hys seruyce of holy chyrch; the aftyr, most what al þe day he wold ben out, othe wyth houndes othe wyth hawkes, for yn thay two thynges he delyted hym swyth mych wythal; & vnnethe he wold ryde any amblyng hors, bot myche trottyng hors, for to trauaylle hys body the more. Aftyr al hys trauaylle a-day, vnnethe he lete hys body haue a lytell reste for to syte to hys mete the whyle that he eete; & anoon aftyr mete, & namely aftyr soppere, anoon he wold aryse & stonde, & so dryue forth al þe meste parte of the nyght, so that al þe court was oft ennyede the of. þe man that he ones yn lych beheld, euer eft he hadde knowleche of hym; & dyng þat he hadde ones herd, euer eft he hyt wold vnderstond; þe man that he ones hated, vnnethe he wold euer eft³ loue; & man that he ones loued, vnneth

¹ vir subrufus, caesius (= lentiginosus), amplo capite et rotundo, oculis glaucis, ad iram torvis, et rubore suffusus, facie ignea, voce quassa, collo ab humeris aliquantulum demisso . . . corpore carnoso, et naturae magis quam gulae vitio, citra tumorem enormem et torporem omnem, moderata quadam immoderantia ventre praecampo. Gir. Cambr. Op. v. 302.

² Erat enim cibo potuque modestus ac sobrius; et parcimoniae, quoad principi licuit, per omnia datus. Gir. Cambr. Op. v. 302. ³ MS. est.

merlynge in his prophesies, and Sayde : “ The Sonnes shullyn agylte agayn the Fadyr for his gyltes ; and the radyr gylte shall be encheyson of the gyltes that aftyr shullyn come. The Sones shall aryse vpon the fadyr ; and forto aw[r]eke his felony agayne the wombe, the tharmes shal Swere ham to-giddy. In the man of blode, the blode shal aryse ; and wanhoply shal his Pynsynge be¹, til that Scotland the Penaunce of his Pylgrimage bewepe.’

et ob sceleris vindictam in ventrem viscera conjurabunt.

[CHAPTER XXXVI.]

The kynge henry the othyr, was a man same rede, rounde hede, and rounde grey eyyn ; row lokynge, and rede in wreth ; Visage rede, brennynge ; * grete Speche ; neke somdel shorte of the Soldrys, breste thyke, of fleschy Body ; ande, more of kynde, than of glotony, gret of wombe ; for he was, as to prynce belongyth, of mete and of drynke ful meen and for-berynge ; and forto aquenche that gretnes, he put hym-Selfe to ful mych trauayl,² that vnneth he lette his body haue enny reste, othyr by day othyr by nyght. For Wyntyr and Somer, he aros euer-more in the dawnynge, and herde fryst his seruyce of holy church ; theraftyr, most part al the day he wolde be out, othyr with houndys or with haukes ; for in thay two thyngys he delayed gretly with-al / and vnneth he wolde ryde any hamlynge hors, but mych trottynge hors, for to trauail his body the more. Aftyr al his trauayl a-daye, vnneth he lette his body haue a lytil reste forto sitte to his mette. the whyle that he ette, and anoone aftyr mette, and namely aftyr soper, anoone he wolde aryse and stonde², and So dryue forth al the moste Parte of the nyght, So that al the courte was ofte wery of his wakyng. the man that he onys in lyche be-helde, euer he hadd knowlege of hym ; and thyng that he hadd ones herde, euer aftyr he wolde hit vndyrstonde. the man that he onys hattyd, vnneth he wolde euer aftyr loue ; and man that he onys lowyd, vnneth he wolde euer aftyr hate. Whan

*Capitulum xxxvj^m. Descriptio Henrici regis tercij. [*Fol. 17 a.]*

immoderata corpus vexatione torquebat.

totam statione continua curiam lassare consueverat.

¹ et desperabilis fiet afflictio.—*Op.* v. 301.

²⁻² sibi nec pacem ullam nec requiem indulgebat. Venationi namque trans modestiam deditus, summo diluculo equo cursore transvectus, nunc saltus lustrans, nunc silvas penetrans, nunc montium juga transcendens, dies ducebat inquietos : vespere vero domi receptum, vel ante coenam vel post, rarissime sedentem conspexeris.—*Op.* v. 302.

Henry II he wold euer eft hate. Whan any vnhappes hym befelle, noman described. meker ; eftē whan he was yn sekernesse, no man sterner. Suert ayeyn the bold, meke wyth ham that wereñ vnder y-brought, hard amonge hys owne, & priuely large amonge vnkouth ; & openly 4 He lovde meekness, and hated pride. mekenesse & debonerte he louede ; pryde & hauteynesse he hated, & wold brynge vnder fote.

A.D.

1174-5.

[CHAPTER XXXVII.]

Henry II Thegh̄ þe kyngē wer wel longe yn grete nuy & grete does not forget his Ireland. anguyshe throught hys sonnes, as hyt ys to-fore I-told, 8 natheles, amonge otheṛ nedes, he ne foryet nat hys Irland. He lete take the *lettres* that waṛ Imade yn the consaylle of Casshele, of the vnclene lyf & the horyble synnes that the folk of Irland lyueden In, || other-wyse than crysten men oght lyuen ; & the 12 [*Fo1. 18 b.] *lettres*, al ensealed as thay wer, he sent by hys messagers to the Court of Rome, to the pope Alyxsander that than was ; & thaṛ he dydde the *purchase*, that by auctoryte of the pope, & by hys concent, was to hym I-graunted the lordshype of the lond ; & þe 16 He gets a grant from the Pope, of the Lordship of Ireland, and a charge to reform the folk to the laws of the Church, lond-folke, that crysten shold be, & al clene was out of ryght reule of crystendome & ryght byleue, to bryngēñ yñ-to ryght lawe of holy chyrch, yn the manere of England. That pryuelege forth, wyth anotheṛ, that rather was *purchased* of þe pope Adriañ, 20 that was to-fore Alexander, was I-sent ouer yn-to Irlande by Nychole, pryouṛ of Walyngford, & Wyllyam Aldelines sone ; & was a consaylle of al the clergie of Irland I-gaddered to-gyddre at Waterford : theṛ weṛ the pryueleges I-shewed & I-radde 24 No[ta] teno[rem] bullee [A]drian. solempnelych to-fore ham, & I-graunted heghlygh by consentement of al the comynes. The forme of thay *preuyleses*, as thay wer endyted yn the Court of Rome a latyne, ne myght I nat comly setten yn Englyshe, & perfor I hyt leue ; bot the meste 28 streynth ys thys :—Whan the pope Adryan hadde herd opynly the euyle lyf, & þe synfule, that þe folk of Irland ladden, wors than wyld bestes, & out of constytueions of holy chyrch & ryght byleue, he graunted the kyngē that he shold ynto Irland wend, for to 32 to withstand sin, and better had doings. adresse & sprede þe *termes* of holy chyrch, for to wythstond & lete the ruyne of syn, for to Amend the lyther thewes, & sette þe good,

any unhappis hym be-felle no mane mckyr. Whan he was in sickyrnys, no man sternyr. Smyrte agayn the bolde, meke wyth ham that weryn vndyr-brought; harde amonge his owyn, ande Pryuely large amonge strange men; and opynly meknys and debonerte he lowyd; Pryde and hauteynesse he hatyd, and wolde brynge vndyr-fete.

clemens in subactos.

diffusus in extraneos.

[CHAPTER XXXVII.]

A.D.

1174-5.

Thegh the kyng were wel longe in gret angwysche throug his sonnes, as hit is to-fore tolde, natheles, amonge othyr nedys, he foryate note his Irlande. he take the letteres that were made in the Consayl of Cassell, of the vnclene lyfe and the horribil Synnys that the Pepil of Irland lyuedyn In / In othyr wyse than crystyn men oght lyue; and the *lettres*, al Ensealid^r as thay were, He sende his messagers to the Courte of Rome, to the Pope Alysandyr that than was, and thar he did Purchase that, by auctorite of the Pope and by his concent, was to hym grauntyd the lorchippe of the londe, and the londe-Pepill that crystyn shold be, and al clene was out of Ryght rule of crystyndome and ryght belewe, to brynge into ryght lawe of holy church, in the maner of England. That pryvylege forth, with an othyr¹ that radyr was Purchasid of the Pope Adriane, that was to-fore Alexandyr, was sende ouer Into Irlande by Nyccle, pryoure of Walyngeforde, and Willam Aldelines-sonne; and was a consayle of al the clergy of Irland^r y-gadderid to-giddy at Watyrford. ther wer the pryuy-legis y-shewyd, and y-radd Sollempnelych to-fore ham, and grauntyd hyghlych of al the comynys. The fourme of thay Pryuylegis, as thay wer endyted^r At Rome a-latyne, y may not comly sette in Englysh, and therfor y * Hit Leue; But the mest streynth is this: Whan the Pope Adryan Hadd Herde opynly the evyl lyfe, and the synfull, that the Pepell of Irland laddyn, wors than wilde bestis, and out of constituciones of holy church and ryght be-lewe, he graunted the kyng, that he sholde into Irland wende, forto adresse and sprede the termys of holy church, forto wythstonde and lete the ruene of synne², forto a-mende the wickid dedis, and sette the good; forto En[e]che religion of crystyndome, So that hit were

Capitulum xxxvij^m.

suae tamen inter agendum Hiberniae non immemor.

ab Alexandro tertio, tunc praesistente, privilegium impetravit.

¹ *quod idem rex ab Adriano... perquisierat.*

in publica audientia ejusdem privilegii, cum universitatis assensu solemniter recitatae facta fuit.

[*Fol. 17 b.]

Nota tenorem bulle Adriane.

² *et vitiorum plantaria inde exstirpanda.*

A.D. 1174-5. for to enechel relygyoun of crystendome, so that hyt war wyrshype to god, & helte to the soules; & the folke of þe londe, manshyply hym shold vptake, & worthy as lorde; saue ryghtes of holy chyrche vnwemmed; & to seynt petyr & þe holy modyr chyrche of Rome, of 4 euery hous a pany to rent, a yer, yn Irland, as yn England. Thys pryuelege was I-purchased of þe pope Adryan; & a clerk hyt purchased, that hette¹ Ihōn of Salusbury; & the pope, by the same clerk, sent to the kyng a gulden ryng, yn name of Seysyne 8 of the lond. the pope Alexandre next aftyr hym confermed that same yift; & euery eþer of ham amonested & parted from god almyghty, & betheght þe deuyl al ham that yn any tyme þer-ayeyne wold come. 12

A.D. 1174.

[CHAPTER XXXVIII.]

Now again for our Knights' deeds in Ireland. Hervey of Montmaurice, jealous of Reinund,

marries Nesta Fitz-Gerald.

O'Brien, King of Limerick, rebels.

Off þe kyng And of hys sonnes, & of the purchace that þe kyng dede, ys Inowe Itold shortlyche: now we wyllen turne ayeyne to oū knyghten gestes yn Irlande. The lond of Irland was yn good pees vnder Reymond-ys kepyng; bot 16 heruy of Mountynorthy,—that euer hadde enuy to Reymond, & saw that hys selth & hys wyrshype wex euer more & more,—fore he ne durst nat openly showe the felony that was yn hys hert, he bethoght that he wold dernely; he made hym semblant of myche 20 loue; besoght ful yorne þat he most allyaunce haue to har kynrede, & namely, that he moste haue to wyue a gentyl-wommañ, Moryces doghter, fytz Gereud, that hegh Neste. Thys mayd was hym Igraunted, & he hyr spoused; & þat þe kynrede sholden the 24 faster be Ibound togydyr, by procuryng of Reymond & of hym eke, þe Erl yaf helyn, hys sustre, to Wyllyam, Moryces eldest sone: þe erl seut eke aftyr Moryce, that was than Iwent ynto Walys; & at hys comyng, he yaue hym þe haluendele of Ofelañ, & þe 28 castel of wykynlo; & þat oþer haluendele he yaue Meyler. In the tyme þat þe pees was, & þe lond yn good state, byfel that Obren, the kyng of Thomon, ayeyne hys trouth & ayeyn the kynges pees, began to withdrawen hym from the kyng, & nocht nold be 31 bowyng to hym, ne to ham that wē vnder hym yn þe lond.

¹ MS. 'sette' for 'hight, hette, or hete,' p. 94, l. 22 below: 'per Johannem Salesberiensem,' v. 316.

vyrchipp to god, *and* helth to the Sowlys ; *and* the Pepil of the londe, manshyly hym sholde vp-take, *and* worthy as lorde ; Saue the ryght of holy church vnwemyd ; and to seynt Petyr *and* the holy modyr church of Rome, of euery hous a peny to rent, a yere, in Irland as in England. This pryuylege was Purchasyd of the Pope Adrian. / And a clerke hit Purchasid that was callid Ihon of Salysbury ; *and* the Pope, by the Same clerke, Sende to the kyng a golde ryng, in tokyn of Seysyn of the londe. And the Pope Alexandyr nexte aftyr hym confermyt that Same yfte ; And euery othyr of ham amonessed *and* Partid from god almyghty, *and* betoke the deuyl al ham that in any tyme ther-ayeynnes wolde come.

A.D.
1174-5.
salva beato Petro, et sacrosanctae Romanae ecclesiae, sicut in Anglia sic et in Hibernia, de singulis domibus annua unius denarii pensione.

[CHAPTER XXXVIII.]

Off the kyng and of his sonnes, and of the Purchas that the kyng did, is y-now tolde Sortelych. Now we will turne agayne to oure knyghten gestis in Irland // The londe in Irland was in good pees vndyr Reymonde-is keyng ; but heruey of montmorthy,—that euer hadd envy to Reymonde, and Saw that his goodnes and his wyrchippe [wex] euer more and more,—for he nedrust not opynly show the felony that was in his herte, he be-thoght that he wolde Pryuely / he made to hym semblant of mych loue ; be-sogh[t] gretly that he sholde alyaunce haue to har kynryde, and namely, that he haue to wyue a gentyl woman, Morices doghtyr, fitz-geraude, that was callid Neste. This mayde was to hym graunted, and he hyr Spoused. and that the kynred sholde be fastyr bounde to-giddy, by procuryng of Reymonde *and* of hym also, the Erle yaue Ellyn his sustyr, to Willam, Morices Eldyst Sone. the Erle sende also aftyr Moryce, that was than went into walis ; and at his comyng, he yaue halfe to hym of Ofelan, and the castel of wickylyw ; *and* the othyr halfe he yaue to Meyler. In the tyme that the Pees was, and the londe in good state, befel that Obreen, the kyng of Thomonde, agayn his trouth *and* the kynges Pees, began to wyth-drawe hym frome the kyng, *and* wolde not be bowyng to hym, nethyr to ham that wer vndyr hym in the londe.

A.D. 1174.
Capitulum xxxviii^m.

Videns . . . ejusque successus de die in diem amplius prosperari.
Nota matrimonium inter Herueum contrahi et Nestam filiam Maurici fitz-geraud.

medium Ophelaniae cantaredum . . . cum Wikingelonenst castro.

[Fol. 19
a.]

A.D. 1175.

Reimund
marches to
Limerick ;
but is
stopt by
the Shan-
non.His
nephew,
Davy the
Welshmanswims the
river
aslant ;but as only
one knight
follows
him, he
swims
back.Meiler
thencrosses the
Shannon.

Reymond told *per*-of myche vnworthynes, & yn lytyl whyle gadered to-dedderes [*so*] hys hoste, so that he hadde an hundred knyghtes & .xx.^{ti}, thre hundret other an hois, & .cccc. bowmen afote, & about al-halwen-tyde went toward lymeryke. Whan thay wer theder 4 I-come, thay hadde grete lette of the grete watyr of þe shynen, that was betwen ham & þe sytè, so that thay myght nat ouer wende : the yonglynges—that wel coueytouse wer ham self to auauance, her stalwarthnesse to showe, & also wynnynge to gete & to 8 have,—weren wel sore a-tened þat thay myght nat ouer to þe syte that was ham so neght, for þe watyr þat was so depe & so streit rennyng betwene, & eke so stony by the ground. As the formest of ham waren houynge vpon þe waterys brynk, was a yonge 12 knyght amonge ham, newly I-dobbet, fayr & stalwa[r]th, Reymondes Neuowe, that hete Dauy the Welsse¹ : throgħ grete couetyse that he hadde, ouer al otheṛ to wyn the formest pryce, ne dredet nat to do hym-self to so horyble perylle of deth ; he smote hys hors *with* 16 the spores, & ouer-threwe adoun ynto þe watyr, þat was so depe & so stony. the horse was myche & stronge, & come sone vp aboute the watyr wyth hym. he wyssed the hors sydlynge ayeyns the watyr asquynt, & come ouer on the otheṛ syde, & cryed to hys 20 men, & seyð that he hadde a ford I-found. bot, for he fond no man þat hym wold felowe, bot o knyght that hete Geffrey Iudas², he turned ayeyne by that same wey, & þe knyght *with* hym. he come ouer hole & sound ; bot þe knyght, progħ þe streyntnesse of þe 24 watyr, was I-throw adoun, he & hys hors, & y-drent to-for ham al. Whan Meyleṛ, that theder was wyth Reymond I-comen, þys saw, he hadde grete enuy that such hardynesse shold be I-teld of any other, & nat to hym : vpon the hors þat hym baṛ, he put hymself 28 yn the watyr, & hardylyche, wyth-outten any ferdnesse, passed ouer þe other syde. The cytzeyns sawe hym comynge so al-oon ; thay comen ayeyn hym, some for to kepe hym vpward at hys comynge out of þe watyr, for to mak hym turne ayeyne ; otheṛ, to vndo hym 32 ryght yn the watyr. The knyght was stalwarth, & boldly putte hym vp bytwene twe perylle :—on on halue, þe wode-yernynge

¹ David agnomine Walensis. *Op.* v. 321.² Galfridus Judas. *Ibid.*

Reymonde tolde therof gret vnworthynys, *and* in lytyll whyle A.D. 1175.
gaddrid to-gidderis his hoste, So that he hadd an hundred knyghtes circa kalendas Octobris.
and xx^{ti}, thre hundrid oþer an hors, and CCCC bowmen afoote; and
aboute al-halwyn-tyde wentyn toward lymerike. whan thay wer
thedyr come, thay hadd gret lette of * the watyr of the Shynnyñ, [*Fol. 18 a.]
that Was Betwen Ham and the Cite, So that thay myght not ouer-
wende. the yonglynges—that wel couetos were ham-selſe to juventus, tam lucri quam laudis cupida, tanquam ad aquas Tantalii posita.
auaunce, har myght to show, and also wynnyngge to gette *and* to
haue,—wer sore greuyd that thay myght not ouer to the cite that
was ham so nyghe, for the watyr that was to depe, and so Streyte
rynnynge betwen, *and* also so stony by the grounde. As the
fryste of ham was abydyngge vpon the watyres brynke, was
a knyght amonge ham newly dobbid, fayre *and* stalwarth, Rey-
mond's Eme, that was callid Dauy the Welsse: throug gret horrendumque mortis periculum laudis amore contemnens.
couetyse that he hadd, ouer al othyr to wyn the formyste price, he
dreddit not to do hym-Selſe to so horribill Perel of deth. he
smote his hors *with* the Sporis, *and* ouer-threw adouñe Into the
watyr, that was depe *and* ful of stonys. the hors was mych *and*
stronge, *and* come Sone vp abow the watyr *with* hym. he wissed Cursum itaque fluminis lateraliter obliquans.
the hors sydlyngge ayeynes the watyr asquynt, *and* come ouer on the
othyr syde, and cried to his men, *and* seyde that he had a forde
founde. but, for he found no man that hym wolde follow, but
O knyght that [was] callid Geffrey Iudas, he turned agayn by that
Same wey (*and* the knyght come *with* hym) holde *and* Sounde; but militem illum, in redeundo, amnis impetuosi violentia raptum, ad ima submersumque non reduxit.
the knyght, throug the Streyt[nys] of the watyr, was caste doun, he
and his hors, *and* drounde to-for ham all / whan Meyler, that
thedyr was *with* Reymonde come, this Sawe, he hadd gret envy
that Such boldnys sholde be tolde of any othyr, *and* nocht of hym :
vpon the hors that hym bare, he Put hym-Selſe in the watyr, *and*
boldely, wyth-out any ferde, Passid ouer the othyr syde. The
Citteseynys Saw hym comyngge out of the watyr so al-oone: thay
came agayn hym, some forto kepe hym vpward at his comyngge out
of the watyr, forto make hym turne agayn; othyr, to vndo hym
ryght in the watyr. The knyght was stronge, *and* boldely Putte
hym vp be-twen two Pere'is:—on oone halue, the wode rynnynge

A.D. 1175. watyr so grysly ; on otheṛ halue, hys fomen, that *with* stonys & *with* Meiler is fawes hym leyden on, both at þe watyr, & vpon the wallys of the stoned and toun, þat ryght vpon the watyr stode. He pute hys sheld & hys shot at by the Limerick men. heed wyth the helme ayeyns the dyntes, & hertely held hym amydde 4

Reimund al þat harme, alone, wythout any helpe, ful unseker on al syde : þe crye was ful horyble on euery halue. And Reymond, that was at þe last of þe hoste, as hede & lodesman & prynce of al þe hoste, herde the crye, & wyst nat yit what hyt was. He come anon hastily 8

calls on his thughe al þe hoste, tyl he come to þe watyr ; & when he sawe hys troops to neuu on that otheṛ syde, so narowe byladde, & on al syde besete so narowe, he hadde grete angwysse yn hys hert ; & sharpe & byttryly bygan to cry to hys felowes : “ Meñ that so stalwarth 12

save ben of ryght kynd, & yn so fele Anguysshes *with* vs hath youṛ Meiler. streynth assayed, cometh forth, men ! the way ys open to-for vs, & the ford that noon of vs ne couth, throgħ hardynesse of ouṛ y-found. folow we now the herty knyght, that so stronge ys 16

byladde, & let me hym neuer so neygh to-for our eghen be I-shent ! ”

He and all *With* that word, Reymond was þe fyrst that put hym yn þe watyr ; his host & al þe hoste aftyr dyde ham yn aduentuṛ, & yn goddys grace, swim the Shannon, & wenten ouṛ al quyte, bot o knyght that hete Guy, & twey fote- 20

Limerick. men. her fomen flowen ² to-fore hem ynto the Cytè, & thay braken yn aftyr, & wan the cytè, & slowen ful many of þe cytzeyns, & dreyntten. Thay fonden ther so myche gold & syluer & other

[[Fol. 19 rychesshe, that for that, & eke for the maystre || that god ham sent, 24 b.] thay told lytel of the perylle & the lostes that thay hadde ther-to-

fore. Nowe arede ye, whyche was the hardyest of these thre

Which was the boldest of the three ? knyghtes ? whether he, that wythout any man to-fore hym, put

Davy, he, that, aftyr ensample of hym, & the horyble death of ham that Meiler, or he, that, aftyr ensample of hym, & the horyble death of ham that Reimund ? weren I-dreynt to-fore har eyghen, passed the watyr, & al-one sette

so hardyly hys body to mark amonge so many fomen ; Other he, that aftyr ham both, so hardyly & so boldly, *with* al the hoste, put 32

hym yn so gret perrylle ? Thus was, as the ³ tyme, lymeryk I-wonnè

¹ MS. fawes. Lat. creberrimis lapidum jaculorumque jactibus. *Op.* v. 322.

² MS. slowen. Lat. fugatis in urbem hostibus, v. 322.

³ ? for ‘at this.’

watyr so grymly; on the othyr syde, his enemys, that wyth stones A. D. 1175.
and with fawis hym leydyn on, both at the watyr, *and* vpon the creberri-
 wallis of the toun, that ryght vpon the watyr stode. he Put his mis lupi-
 shelde and his hede *with* the sallet¹, agayn the strokys, *and* hertely culorumque
 helde hym amynd al the Perelis al-one, *with*-out any helpe, ful jactibus.
 vnsure on al sydis / the cry was ful horribill on euery syde. And galeam
 Reymond, that was at the laste of the hoste, as hede and ledder and ictibus
 prynce of al the hoste, herde the cry, *and* wyst not what hit was. clipeumque
 he come anoone hastely throw al the hoste, til he come to the watyr; praeten-
 and whan he Saw his eme on that othyr syde, so narrow besette, dens.
 he hadd grete angwysche in his herte; and sharpe and bittyr began acriter ex-
 to cry to his fellouys, “Men, that So bolde ben, of ryght kynde, and clamavit:
 in so many angwyschis *with* vs hath youre streynth proued, come Viri, qui-
 forth, men! they way is oppenyd² to-for vs; and the forde that noone bus virtutis
 of vs knew, throghe boldnys of oure is founde. followe now the herty rigorem
 knyght that so stronge is by-ladde; *and* lette we neuer so ney to-for insitum
 oure eyne be shente!” wyth that worde, Reymonde was the fryste novimus a
 that * Put Hym in the Watyr; and al the Hoste aftyr did Ham in natura,
 aduenture, and in goddys grace, *and* wenten ouer al quyte, (but quorumque
 o knyght, that was callid Guy, *and* two footmen,) ²her enemys in tot an-
 kyllodyn to-for hem, into the Cite³, *and* Slowyn ful many of the gustiiis uni-
 Citteseynes, and dreyntyn². Thay foundyn ther so mych golde and mositatis
 Siluyr, and othyr riches, that for that, and also for the Maystry that vires ex-
 god ham sende, thay tolde lytel of the Perel and the lostis that thay perti-
 hadd ther-to-fore. Now ared þe, whyche was the boldyst of this sumus.
 thre knyghtes: Whedyr he that, *with*-out any man to-for hym, put Nota pã
 hym in the watyr forto techyn al the othyr the wey; Othyr he that, captionem
 aftyr Ensampill of hym, and the horribil deth of ham that weryn ciuitatis
 drovnde to-for har eyyn, Passid the watyr, *and* al-one sette so limeric.
 hardy his body, to marke, amonge so many ennemys; Othyr he that, [*Fol. 18
 aftyr ham both, so hardy and so boldely, *with* al the hoste, Put hym b.]
 in so grette Peril. Thus was as this tyme lymerike take on

²⁻² fugatis in urbem hostibus, non sine grandi civium strage, muros statim irruerunt; et urbe potiti cum victoria, spoliis plurimum ditati et auro, periculi damna lucri simul et laudis honore compensarunt. v. 322-3.

³ The English copier of this MS. has jump't from the first 'Cite' to the second—see lines 21, 22 opposite,—and put 'killedyn' = 'slowen' l. 22 opp. for 'fowen,' l. 21 opp.

A. D. 1175. one a tywesday¹; Watyrford I-wonne one a tywesdaye, & dyuelyn
 Three Vic- also : nocht for o coste was that day awayted *per-to*, bot as hyt
 tories on a byfelle by cas & by adwentu^r; & nat wythout skyle, ffor the
 Tuesday, tywesday, by hethen men day yn the old world, was I-sette to a god 4
 the day dedicated that day cleped Mars, & was I-hold god of bataylle; & on that day
 by hea- thens to Mars. that day fonden, *pat* whoso bataylle besoght, he shold spede better than
 Mars. yn *oper* dayes.

[CHAPTER XXXIX.]

Reimund
 Fitz-
 Gerald

was a far-
 seeing, self-
 restraind
 man,

watchful at
 night,

liberal,

and most
 skilful in
 War.

Now I wille yowe telle these twey stalwarth knyghtes, 8
 Reymond & Meyler, whych thay weren. Reymond was
 a man brod of body,² somdel more than metlyche, yolowe he^r &
 sam-crysp, grey eyghen & depe, somdel heyghe nose, neb rody,
 wel I-hewed, glad semblant & cleer²; man of moche methe & of 12
 grete *purueyaunce*; nothyng delycion, nother of mete ne of cloth;
 heet & cool, al I-lyche, wel he myght suffre; man of mych
 trauaylle; tholmode yn wreth; as redy he was to *serue*, to queme
 ham that he was ouer, as to be I-*serued* of ham. Whan he hoste 16
 ladde, he was so besy about to kepe the host, that oft he left
 slepe al the nyght, & wandredde about, spyenge & crynge for to
 look *pat* noon harme ne shold betyde, & for he wold euer fyrst be
 redy, yf hyt nede wer. & shortlych to sygge hys thewes & hys 20
 maneres, he was man free & meke, queynt & *purueyng*; & thegh
 he wer swyth hardy & wel taght yn wepne, of quenyntyse & of
 sleyght yn syght, & of selth yn bataylle, he passed al other³; &
 thegh he yn both we^r myche to preyse, he was better leder of 24
 hoste *pan* knyght.

[CHAPTER XL.]

Meiler
 lookt dark
 and stern.

Meyleyler was a man of durk semblant; blak eghen, &
 rogh lokyng; sterne semblant; of body, somdel more than
 methlych; ful stalwarth, wel I-brested, smal mydel⁴, armes & other 28

¹ Later note in margin: 'The^r-aftyre hyt was I-socoured one a tywsday.

²⁻² *staturaeque paulo plus quam mediocris; capillis flavis et subcrispis, oculis grossis, glaucis et rotundis, naso mediocriter elato, vultu colorato, hilari, ac sereno.* *Op.* v. 323.

³ et quanquam animosus plurimum, et armis instructus, prudentia tamen rebus in martiis et providentia praecelebat. v. 324.

⁴ *staturae paulo mediocri plus pusillae; corpore tamen pro quantitatis captu pervalido; pectore quadrato, ventreque substricto.* v. 324.

a tyvysday, theraftyr hit was socourid on a tywysday, waterford A. D. 1175.
 was take on a tyvysday, and deuelyn also. noght for oo Purpos *nec per in-*
 was that day wayted therto, but as hit befell by case and by *dustriam*
haec, sed
 aduventure, and not *with-out* skylle. For the tyvysday, by hethyn *casu solo*
 men tyme in the olde worlde, was sette to a god that is callid Mars, *contigisse.*
and Was holde god of battayle; And on þat day thay fovndyn, that
 who-so battayl be-soght, he sholde spede bettyr that day than in
 othyr dayes.

[CHAPTER XXXIX.]

NOwe y wille you telle thes two bolde knyghtes, Reymond *Capitulum*
and Meyler, whych they weryn // Reymond^r was a man *xxxix^m.*
 brode of body, somdel more than metlych, yolowe here, and sam- *Descriptio*
 crysp; grey eyyn and depe, Somdel hegh nose, face rody we[1] hewid, *Reymundi*
 glad, semblante, *and* clere; man of mych mette *and* of grete Puruey- *Le gras.*
 aunce / nothyng delicious, nothyr of mete ne of cloth; ¹ hette *and* *Vir mo-*
 colde, al y-lyke, wel he myght suffyr; man of mych trauail; *providus,*
 tholmode in wreth; as redy he was to Serve, to queme ham that he *nec cibo*
 was ouer, as to be *seruyd* of ham ¹. Whan he hadd host, he was so *nec veste*
 byssy about to kepe the hoste, that ofte he lefte Slepe al the nyght, *delicatus.*
and Walkid about, Spyenge and crienge forto loke that noone harme
 ne sholde befall, and for he wolde euer fryst be redy, yf hit nede
 were. And Sortely to Say his condicionys and his maneres, he was
 man fre and meke, queynt and Purueyyng; *and* thegh he wer *providus*
 Swyth hardy, *and* wel taght in wepyn, of queyntyse and of Sleght *et prudens.*
 in fygh[t], *and* of Selth in battayl, he Passid al othyr; and thegh he ² *multum*
 in both were mych to Preyse ², he was bettyr ledder of hoste than *quidem*
 knyght. *militis*
habens,
sed plus
ducis.

[CHAPTER XL.]

MEyler was a man of durkesemblant; ³blake eyne and rogh *Capitulum*
 lokyng; sterne Semblante; of body, somdel more than *xl^m.*
 metlych, ful bolde, wel brestyde, smale myddyl, armys and othyr *oculis*
nigris et
torvis.

¹⁻¹ caloris et algoris ei patientia par: vir patiens irae, patiensque laboris. Quibus praesidebat prodesse magis quam praeesse, potiusque minister quam magister videri volens.—*Op.* v. 324. (No Latin here for 'Whan . . . nede were.')

lymmes ful bony, more synowy than fleysly. he was knyht ful
 Meiler was hardy & enuyouse; he was *neuer* aferde ne agryse to begynne
 never afraid of thyngge yn fyght that any man oght done hym on, Ather wyth
 any enter-prise. other̄ y-meued¹. In euery fyght, he was þe fyrst to begynne, & the 4
 He'd laste that hyt wold leue. Al þe stalwarthnese that any man myght
 win or die. do, he wold passe, or suffre deth; the maystrye & prys to wynne,
 But he, and all the knights, robd the Church. other̄ deye,—nothyngge he ne sette betwene. Of al thyngge, bothe
 these knyghtes wē to preyse myche wyth-al, nē hyt that thay, 8
 through couetyse, oft byname holy chyrch hē ryghtes; bot more
 harme ys, & mychel to mourne, that defaute haddeñ meste al oū
 knyghtes from the forme begynnynge. What was Robert
 Praises of the Fitz-Stephens, Fitz-Gerals, St. Davids, Fitz-Henrys, Fitzhughs, &c. steuenessoñ & hys sonnes yn hā tyme? what, Moryce fytz 12
 Geraud & hys sones? what, Robert debarry, of whom ys to-fore
 I-told? what, myles de seynt dauy? both Robertes & Moryce
 neueuen, that with þe formest boldly come ynto Irland? what,
 Robert fyz henry, Meyleres brothē? what, Reymond de Cante- 16
 tone? what, Robert de barry the yonge? what, Reymond hues-
 sone? what, other̄ of the selue gentrye, many & I-nowe, whych
 The memory of their pluck and grand deeds shall never die out. hyt wā stronge to namen al by nam? for no mane ne myght hyt
 bethynk, bot hā stalwarthnesse ne hē good deddes shold *neuer* 20
 wend out of mynd. Thay wē a folke & a kynrede, on two halue,
 kyndly, stalwarth, & hardy; on other halue, of þe kynde of ffrance,
 [*Fol. 20 a.] & thē of wel I-taght yn wepne of myche * *nenbre* (?) of kynred
 & kynd stalwarthnesse *euer* more to hē ende. Whan Reymonde 24
 A. D. 1175. hadde I-wonne the sytè of lymeryke, he ordeyned & *purueyed*
 how the cytè myght be best I-kept; he lete bryngge thedē
 Reimund victuals Limerick, and leaves his cousin, Miles of St. David's, in charge of it. vyttaylle on euery halue grete plente, & lefte þer Myles of seynt
 dauy, with fyfty knyghtes & squyers an-hors, & ccc bowmen, 28
 & with þe other *parte* of the hoste wyth yoy & gladnesse al
 harmles turned ayejne ynto leynestre.

[CHAPTER XLI.]

The lond was þan yn good pees vnder Reymondes kep-
 yngge, so that non Iresshe-man ne durst hym stur to 32
 mysdom. Heruy of Mommorthy, that *euer* hadde enuy to hym,

¹ Miles animosus et æmulus; nihil umquam abhorrens, quod aggredi quis vel solus debeat vel comitatus, v. 324.

lymes full bony, more synowy than fleshy. he was knyght ful Descriptio Melerij.
 hardy *and* Enuyouse; he was newyre aferde ne agryse to begynne
 thyng in fyght that any man ogh don hym \bar{on} , * Althyr wyth [*Fol. 19
 othyr ymewyd. In euery fyght, he was the fryst to Pegynne, and þe a.]
 laste hit to leue; al the boldnes that any man myght do, he wolde
 Passe, or suffyre dethe. The maystry and Prysce to wyn othyr dye, inter mor-
 nothyng he ne sette betwen. Of al thyng, both this knyghtes tis et
 were to Preyse mych wyth-all, nere hit that thay, throug covetyse, martis
 ofte toke holy church ryghtes; but more harme is, *and* gretly to triumphos,
 morne, that defaute haddyn meste al our knyghtes frome the fryst nihil me-
 begynnyng. / What was Robert Steuenes-sone *and* his Sonnys; diu
 What, Robert de barry, of whom is to-for tolde; What, Morice fiz- ponens.
 geraud *and* his sonnes; What, Miles de seynte dauy; both Robert
and Morices emys, that wyth the fryst boldely come into Irland;
 what, Robert fiz-henry, Meyler-is brodyr; What, Reymonde de
 Canteton; What, Robert de barry the yonge; What, Reymond Hues- Quid alii
 Sone; What, othyr of the same gentil, many *and* y-now, whych hit generosi-
 were stronge to telle by name? for no man ne myght hit be-thynke, tatis ejus-
 but har boldenys ne her good dedys shold neuer go out of mynde. dem quam
¹ They wer a pepill *and* a kynred, on both sydys, be kynde, bolde plurimi,
 hardy; on othyr halue of the kynde of Fraunce, *and* ther-of wel quibus
 taght in wepyn, of mych nembre, of kynred *and* kynde bolde, euer- insignia
 more to her ende¹ // Whan Reymonde hadd take the Cite of lymerike², singulorum
 he ordeynyd *and* Purueyed how the Cité myght be best kepte: he gesta
 lette bryng thedyr vytayñ, on euery halue, grete Plente; *and* lefte perennem
 ther Miles of Seynt dauy, with fifty knyghtes *and* Squerys an hors, poterant
and CCC bowmen; *and* wyth the othyr Parte of the hoste, with Ioy laudis
and gladnys, al harmeles, turned agayn Into leynystre. memoriam
²A. D. 1175.

[CHAPTER XLI.]

THe londe was than in good Pees vndyr Reymondys kepyng, Capitulum
 So that non Irysh-man durst not styr hym to mysdone. xlj^m.
 Heruey of Mounmorthy, that euer had Enuy to hym, ne lefte not, Herreius
de Monte
 Mauricii.

¹⁻¹ O gens! O gens! gemina natura, a Trojanis animositatem, a Gallis armorum usum originaliter trahens.—*Op.* v. 326.

A. D. 1175. ne left nat, for the allyance that was ham betwene, þat he ne Reimund dydde hym al þe harme that he myght, & opynly shewed than Fitz-Gerald, and þe felony that he longe hadde I-borne yn hys hert. He sent ouer sends lies about him to Henry II, to þe kynge by Messagers, ¹ & made hym to vnderstond that 4 Reymond was yn yndygnacion of the kynge; & ayeine hys owne trouth, so hauteyn I-worth, that he wold al Irland take to hym & to hys ¹; &, for hys lesynges shold þe bettyr be y-leued, feel þynges he made hym to vndrestond, & so fayr hyt slyked wyth 8 falsnesse, that hyt somet sothe, al that he seyde. The kynge—as ofte manere ys that lydder tales ben bettyr I-leued, & lenger I-thought, that good—he beleued þe fals manyns talys & wryynges, & sent yn-to Irland four Messagers, that ys to wytten, Robert 12 the power, Osbern of herford, Wyllyam Berynger, & Adam of yarmemouth, of whych the twey shold abyde with the Erle yn Irland, & þe other tweyn shold wende ayeine ynto England wyth Reymond, as þe kynge hym hadde COMMAWNDET. 16

which the King believes, and despatches Messengers to bring Reimund back.

Nota de aduentu powerenter in hiberniam.

Hervey de Montmaurice

was as fair without, as he was feul within. He was lecherous, incestuous, envious, treacherous,

a coward, a braggart, and a liar.

[CHAPTER XLII.]
Heruy was a man fayr & lygne, eyghen grey & depe, ouelyche lokynges, fayr semblaunt, of fayr spech & wordes wel besete; of body more than methlych, of al lymmes ful becomly; bot as fayr & as becomly as he was wytout, as lydde 20 & as fals of many maner lastes he was wyt-In; ffor, fro the tyme that he was chyld, he yaf hymself to lecherye; & nat only to many sengle wommen; bot he ne synned neþer spousbrych ne syblynges; he was onful & bakbyte, ² wreyer, false & traytu, duble of 24 tonge & nothyng stydfaste, butt yn ² falsnesse hys speche thoght as thogh hyt wer hony & mylk out of hys mouthe, bot euer hyt was I-meygnet with attyr at þe ende. Som tym he was stalwarth, as to knyght longeth; bot aftyr, he yaue hym selue more to 28 cowerdyse than to knyghthode; & more he couth hym maken, than he was worth ³; hegh of berynges yn hous, & noght of plente; of mych speche, & lytel sothnesse.

¹⁻¹ illi sinistre rerum eventum indicarit: asseverans quoque Reimundum, contra regis honorem, et fidem debitam, non tantum Limericum, verum etiam Hiberniam totam, sibi suisque jam occupare proculdubio proposuisse.—*Op.* v. 327.

²⁻² These words are in a different hand.

³ MS. wroth.

for the alyauce that was ham betwen, that he ne did hym al the harme that he myght, and opynly shewed than the felony that he longe thought in herte. he sende ouer to the kynge by messangerys, and did hym to vndyrstonde, that Reymonde was in indignacion of the kynge; and agayn his owyn throuth, so Hauteyn I-worth, that he wolde al Irland take to hym and to his. And, for his lesyngys sholde the bettyr be belewid, ¹many lesyngys he made hym to vndyrstonde; and So fayre hit glosyd with lesyngis, that hit Semyd trowth, al that he sayde ¹. The kynge,—as ofte maner is, that fals talys ben bettyr belewid, and lengyr thought ², than good,—he belewid the fals manes talys and accusynges, And Sende Into Irland foure Messagers, that is to wittyn, Robert de Power, Osbern of Herforde, Willam Berynger, And adam of Iarnemouth ³; of the whych, two sholde abyde with the Erle in Irland, and the othyr two sholde wende agayn in-to England, with reymond, as the kynge hym hadd comandyd.

A. D. 1175.

*Et ut hoc
figmentum
delator
regiis
auribus
tutus et
probabilis
praesen-
taret.
2 memoria
diuturnior.*

*Nota de
aduentu
Poweren-
cium in
Hiber-
niam.*

[CHAPTER XLII.]

HEruey was a man fayre and lygne, eyghyn grey and depe ⁴, lolych lokynges, fayre semblant, of fayre Speche and wordys wel besette * of body more than metlych, of al Lymmys wel becomly; But as fayre and as Becomly as he was wyth-out, As wickyd and as fals of many maner lastes he was wyth-In. // Fro the tyme that he was chylde, he yaued hym-Selfe to lechery, and not only to many Syngyl Women ⁵, but he ne synnyd neuer spousebrich ne siblynges; he was onfull and bacbyter, wreyer, fals and trechoure, doubill of tonge, and nothyng stydfast but in falsnesse; his spech, as hit were honny and mylke out of the mouth, but euer hit was medlid with wenym at the Ende. Sometym he was bolde, as longyth to a knyght; but aftyr, he yafe hym [more] to cowardyse than to knyght-hode; and more he made of hym-Selfe than he was worth; hey of berynges in house, and not of plente; of myche speche, and lytyl trowth.

*Capitulum
xliij^m.*

*Descriptio
Heruei.*

*[*Fol. 19
b.]*

*4 promi-
nentibus
aspectu
amabili.*

*5 nec
incestus*

*illos, nec
adul-*

*teriam
vitans. Vir*

*invidus,
delator, et*

*duplex;
vir sub-*

*dolus,
facetus, et
fallax.*

¹⁻¹ ad votum effectui mancipandum, in Bragmannorum morem conjuratas ad hoc catervas Reimundum asserit composuisse. v. 327.

³ Robertum Poerium, et Osbertum de Herlotera, Gulielmum de Bendinges, et Adam de Gerneues. v. 328.

[CHAPTER XLIII.]

A. D. 1176.

Reimund
hears that
Donnell
O'Brien,
King of
Limerick,
is besieging
the English
there.

Reimund
marches
for
Limerick,
[* Pol. 20
b.]

with
McMur-
rough
of Okensely
and King
Donnell of
Ossory.

The men
of Thomond
barricade
the Pass
of Cashel
against the
English.

K. Donnell
of Ossory
appeals to
the Anglo-
Irish force
to fight
bravely.

Reymond hym dyght for to wende ynto England, as the
kyнге hym commandet; & nothyng abode, bot wynd &
wedyr at the see: come Messagers, hastyly I-sent from the meygne
of lymeryke, & tolden that Obreen, the kyнге of thomond, was 4
belyggyng lymeryke with ful grete hostes; &, for þey hadden
all the wytaylle þat Reymond ham lefte & eke that thay haddeñ
theŕ-aftyŕ I-puchassed yn the wenter-tyme, al I-spendet, me shold
ham hastyly send socoure. The Erle was ful anguysshous ham 8
for to socour, & spake þer-of to the meygne, & besoght ham wel
yone (yorne?) theder to go; bot thay war so wroth & so sory
for Reymondes wendinge away, that euerychon, with oo mouth,
for-soken alout, that, without Reymond, for nothyng theder thay 12
nold wend. The Erle toke consaylle heŕ, of the kynges messagers;
&, for the thyng was yn grett perryll, at þe end, throgħ bysy
besechyng of the erle & eke of ham, Reymond turned ayeine
the baneres toward * lymeryke. And as thay come toward 16
Casshel wyth the hoste,—as myght be, syxty knyghtes, & two
hundret squyers & thre hundret bowmen, wythout Iresshe-men
that comen eke wyth ham, as Macmorgħ of okensely & dofnild
of osserye,—me come to ham, & told ham, fore that þay of 20
thomond hadde I-lefte þe sege of lymeryke, & wer I-comen ayeins
ham, to kepe ham yn the paas of Casshel; & thegħ the paas
was stronge yn hymselfe, thay kesten adoun tren, & made dyches
thaŕ towŕ, & hegges vpon, for noon horsmañ ne shold ouer wend. 24
Whan thay wereñ negħ to the pas I-comen, Reymond deled the
hoste a thre. & downyld, þe kyнге of Ossery, that ful mychell
hated, & foman was to, ham of thomon, saw þe Englyshe hoste—
thegħ thay fewe weŕ—of ful good herte, & wel & semly I-wepned, 28
for thay shold be þe trustyer, & the bettre herte haue to hem, &
seyd, “Men, that þys lond wyth stalwarthnesse haue I-wonne,
assayleth today styfly your fomen! ffor yf, ye, as your won ys,
ouercometh, & the maystry haue; our sparthes, forth wyth your 32
swerdys, our fomen smertly shulle folowed aftyr; & yf ye—that
god forbede!—ben ouercome, sykeŕ be ye that we forth with our
fon-eñ wylleñ turne vpon yowe. Take hede, knyghtes, & vnder-
stondeth, your townes & your castels ben welle ferŕ hennes, & 36

[CHAPTER XLIII.]

REymond made hym redy to go into England as the *Capitulum*
 kynges hym commaundid *and* nothyng abode but wynde *xliij^m.*
and wedyr at the See. Come messagers hastely sende frome *A. D. 1176.*
 the meny of lymerike, *and* toldyn that Obreen, the kynges of
 Thomonde, was besegyn lymerike *with* ful grete hostis; and, for *quoniam*
 thay haddyn al the vytail that Reymonde *with* ham had lefte, *omnia ali-*
menta, tum
and also that thay purchasid sithenys, thay had al spende, And *ibi inventa*
quam at-
 that thay sholde hastely sende ham Socoure. The Erle was ful *tracta,*
 angwyschous ham for-to socoure *and* Spake therof to the meny *brumali*
and besoght ham wel ofte thedyr to go, but thay were so wroth *tempore*
consump-
 and So sory for Reymondes goyng away, thay euerchone wyth o *serant.*
 woyses forsokyn al, that wyth-out Reymonde for no-thinge thedyr *se illuc*
 thay wolde goo. / The Erle toke consayl her-of of the kynges *ituros*
 messangers, and for the thyng was in gret Perel. at the Ende *absque*
 throw besechyng of the Erle *and* also of ham Reymond turned *Reimundo*
 agayn the baners toward lymerike. And as thay come to-ward *omnes*
 cassel *with* the hoste—as myght be, Sixti knyghtys *and* two hundrid *unanimit-*
 Squyeres *and* iij^c bowmen, *without* Iryssh-men that comyn also *dicent.*
1 *audivit*
Tuhetmo-
 with ham, as Macmurg^h of O-kensley and dofnyld of Ossery—thay *nienses,*
 come to ham, *and* tolde ham, *1* fore that thay of Thomon hadd lefte *obsidione*
 the sege of lymerike, *and* were comyn agaynes ham, to kepe ham in *relicta, ei*
 the Paas of Casshel; and thegh the Paas was stronge in hym-Selfe, *in passu*
 thay castyn adoun trees, *and* made dichis thartowre, *and* heggys *Cassiliensi*
 vpon, for noone hors-man ne sholde ouer-wende. When thay wer *obciam*
 ney to the Paas y-come, Reymond delid the host a thre. And *venisse; et*
 downyld, the kynges of Ossory, that gretly hatid, *and* enemy was *locum,*
 to ham of Tomonde, Saw the Englyssh host (thegh thay few were) *natura*
 of ful good herte, *and* wel semely wepenyd; and for thay sholde be *dificilem,*
 the trustier, and the bettyr herte haue to them; *and* sayde, “Men, *confragis*
 that wyth boldnes this londe haue conquerid, assaylyth this day *et fossatis*
 styfly youre enemys! For an ye, as youre wonē is, ouercomyth, and *plurimum*
 the maystry haue, our Sparrys, forth *with* youre Swerdys, oure *exaspe-*
 enemys smyrtylly shull follow after. And yf ye (that god forbede!) *rasse;*
 ben ouer-come, sycky be ye *2* that we forth *with* oure enemys wil *sepem*
 turne vpon yow. Take hede, knyghtys, and vndyrstondyth, youre *quoque*
 * tounys and your castelys Ben wel ferre Hennes, and the flyght ful *fortissi-*
mam ex
transverso
locasse.
2 *in vos cum*
hostibus
procul-
dubio con-
vertentur.
 [*Fol. 20
 a.]

A. D. 1176. the flyght ful longe, & oūr maner ys, to helpe ham that ben omost,
 & folowe the fleynge. trysteth wel to vs; bot no lenger than the
 ouer hand ys your̄." ¶ Whane thys was yseyd, Meylēr, þat was
 yn the formeste of the host, smertly spronge out, as sparke out 4
 of fȳr; & al the host aftyr stalwartly com to the pas; & nat
 wyt-out gret slaght of ham that wythstoden, opened the way,
 & wentten ouer an estre euen, & a thrydde ester day, that ys to
 wentten̄, on a tywesday, as at the othēr tyme. Also nowe, the 8
 host come ynto lymeryk, Reymond lete ryght & arē that, throgħ
 the sege of hār fomen, was I-wasted & destrued. & nat lange
 thēr-aftyr, he held parlement wyth the kyng of Connaght & the
 kyng of Thomon, bot yn oo day bot nat yn o place; ffor the kyng 12
 of Connaght held hym yn the watyr of the shynen, yn a myche
 logħ, yn botys, & the kyng of Thomon was thār negħ yn a
 Killaloe, wodde. Reymond was betwene two, at kyldalo, as myght by,
 syxten myle frome lymeryk. Thēr was the parlement so fer forth 16
 I-dryuen, that euery of ham delyuered to Reymond good hostages,
 & othes many-fold sworne hold & trewe, yn good pees for to hold
 euer efte to the kyng & to hys. Whan thys was I-done, &
 Reymond turned ayeyne wyth hys hostages to lymeryke, þe 20
 prynce of desmond, Dermot Maccarthy, sent by messagers to
 Reymond, & besoght hym that he ayeyne hy[s] eldeste sore that
 hete Cormoc Olethā—tha[t] wel negħ hym out of hys kyngedome
 I-putte—hym, as the kynges trew man, shold helpe; & 24
 large yiftes he byhete, both to Reymond & the meygne, wyth that
 that thay wold hym helpe. Reymond, as mān that had nat loth
 wynnynges, ne hymself to auauance, spake her-of to hys falawes,
 & thay alle graunted to dōn as he wold, & turned the baners 28
 toward the Contreys of Cork. by weyes as thay wentten̄, thay
 name many prayes, whēr-of the meynge was ful wel apayed, &
 mych ther-of was oft I-sent to lymeryk, so longe, that throgħ help
 of Reymonde, Dermot recouered al hys kyngedome vpon̄ hys sone 32
 —of whyche he was negħ I-pute owt:—the sone was I-take &
 delyuered to the fadyr, & he hym pute yn pryssoun, & nat longe
 ther-aftyre hym be-lete take out of pryssoun, & smyth of hys
 hede.

Meiler Fitz-Henry leads the attack, and forces the Pass on Easter Eve April 3. They enter Limerick, and repair it. Reimund, at

induces the Irish rebels to swear allegiance to Henry II. He then agrees to help Dermot Maccarthy against his son Cormack.

Reimund marches to Cork, and beats Cormack,

who is put in prison, and then beheaded.

Longe. ¹ And oure maner is, to helpe ham that ben omyste, and follow the fleynge. trystyth wel to vs; but no longyr than ye haue the ouer haude" / Whan this was sayde, Meyler, that was in the formyst of the hoste, smyrtly styrted out, as sparke of fyre; and al the host aftyr, boldely come to the Paas; and not wyth-out gret slaght of ham that wythstodyn, openyd the way, and wentyn ouer an Estre-evyn, and the thyrd Estyr-day, that is to say, on a tyvysday, as at the othyr tyme. also now þe hoste come to lymerik, Reymond lette rere that throw the sege of har enemys was wastid' and destrued. and not lange ther-aftyr, he helde Parlement wyth the kynge of Connaght and the kynge of Thomonde, both in oo day, but not in oo Place; For the kynge of Connaght helde hym in the watyr of shynnyn, in a myche logh, in botis, and the kynge of Thomonde was thar negh in a wodd. Reymonde was betwen two at kyldalo, as myght by, systene mile from lymerik. Ther was the Parlement So fer forth drywen, that euery of ham delyuerid to Reymond good hostagis, and othis manyfolde Sworn, holde and trew, in good Pees forto holde euer aftyr to the kynge and to his. Whan this was don, and Reymond turned agayn with his hostagis to lymerike, the Prince of Desmonde, Dermot Maccarthy, sende by messagèrs to Reymonde, and besoght hym that he-agayn his eldyst Sone that hete Cormok Olethan, that wel ney hym out of his kyngdome Putte,—hym, as the kynges trew man, sholde helpe; and large yftys he Promysyd, both to Reymond and the meny, yf thay wolde hym helpe. Reymond, as man that had no loth wynnynge, ne hym-Selfe to auctorice, Spake herof to his fellowis; and thay al graunted to do as he wolde, and turned the baners toward the contreis of Corke. ² by weyes as thay wentyn, thay rerid many Prayes, Wherof the meny was ful wel appayed and wel arrayed, and mych therof was ofte sende to lymerik. So longe, that by the helpe of Reymond, Dermot recoverid al his kyngdome vpon his sone, of whom he was ney Putt out / the Sone was take, and delyuerid to the Fadyr; and he Putt hym in prysone. and not longe ther-aftyr, hym he lette take out of pryson, and smyte of his hede.

Nota quod hibernici non sunt amici nisi quandiu forma faciet.

¹ Et nos victoribus semper adhaerentes, solum persequimur fugientes. De nobis itaque confidite, sed victores.

fidelitatem Anglorum regi et suis de cetero inuolabiliter exhibendam sacramentis corporaliter praestitis renouaverit.

² Multis itaque tum praedis in brevi quam stipendiis, familia in partibus illis abunde refecta, et alimenterum copia Limericum abunde persaepe transmissa.

A. D. 1176.

[CHAPTER XLIV.]

[Fol. 21a.]
Reimund
Fitz-
Gerald
hears from
his wife
Basile,

that her
bad tooth
is out,

i.e. that
Earl Stri-
guil is
dead, tho'
his death
is kept
secret.

Reimund's
Council
advise him
to quit
Limerick,
and take
his men to
Leinster.

So he com-
mits Lim-
erick to
O'Brien,
who swears
to keep it
in peace ;
but at once
breaks his
oath, and
destroys
the Bridge.

The whyle that Reymond was in this maner yn
desmon, come a Messager to hym ffrom dyuelyn,
hastyly I-sent, & broght hym a *lettre* from basile, hys wyf; bot
he that hyt broght, wyst nat what hyt was. Reymond hadde 4
wyth hym a clerk that he wel tryst to; he lete hym rede the
lettre prinelych, that thus myche hym seyde: "To hyre leue
lord & hyr spouse Reymond, hys basyle sendeth gretynge. as to
hyr selue, wyt thou, lef man, that the grete chek-toth that so sore 8
me oke, ys I-falle. Wherefore, yf thou any thyngre recheste of thy
self, other of me, ne leue nat to come hastyly to me." Whan
Reymond thys herd, he vnderstode that the mych toth that hyr
was I-falle, betokned þe Erles deth; for he lefte hym ful seke at 12
dyuelyne, whan he parted from hym. And thegh he lange ther-to-
fore was ded, for drede of Iresshe-men he was for-hold tyl
Reymondes comes, & the meygnees, ynto leynestre. Reymond
turned sone to lymeryke. & þe sorow that was yn hys hert 16
wyth-yn, he, for al hyt, as myche as he myght, *wyth* fayr semblant
makyngre *wyth-out*; & ful fewe men, he shewed the aduentur that
so sodeynly was byfalle; & of ham that mooste good kouth, he
besoght consaylle & rede, what was ham to done. Than was 20
comenly haer rede such: "what fore the erles deth, what for
Reymondes wendynge out of the lond, that the sytè of lymeryke,
that was so ferer, & amonge so many enemyes, me shold leue voyde;
& al the meygne holy led ynto leynestre, þe townes vpon þe see 24
& the castels for to kepe." Reymond, thegh hym loth wer,
graunted thys, & stod to haer rede; &, for he ne fond none that
aftyр hym wold ther abyde, he betoke Obreeñ, the kyngre of
thomoñ, the Cytè to kepe as the kynges baroun, & toke of hym 28
efte newe hostages, & many new othes I-swore, the toun harmles
for to kepe, & the pees trewly for to hold. Vpon thys forward,
they wenten al out of the Cytè, & lefte Obreeñ & hys men *wyth-yn*;
& vnnethes thay war I-passed the brygge, that þe tother end nas 32
I-brokeñ anoon ryght behynd ham, & þe toun, that wel & fast was
I-walled, & wel I-byld *wyth* good housses I-herkergerd o wyttaylle
that on euery half pether was I-broght well I-toffe, nat *wyth-out*

[CHAPTER XLIV.]

A.D. 1176.

The whyle that Reymond was in this maner in
 desmonde, come a Messenger to hym frome deuelyn,
 Hastly sende, and broght hym a lettyr frome basyle, his wyfe;
 but he that hit broght, wyst not what hit was. Reymond hadd
 with hym a clerke that he trust wel to. / He mad him rede the
 lettyr priuely, þat thus mych hym sayde: "To hir welbelowid lorde
 and Spouse, Reymond, his basylle sendyth gretynge. as to hyre-
 Selve, wit thou, lefe man, that the grete chektoth that so sore me
 grewid, is falle; Werfor, yf ye rekyth any-thinge of youre-Selve,
 othyr of me, ne leue not to come hastely to me." When Reymond
 this herde, he vnderstod by the mych toth, that * Hyr was fall,
 Betokenyd the Erllys deth; for He Lefte Hym ful seke at deuelyn
 when he lefte hym. And thegh he lang therto-for was ded, for
 fere of Irysh-men, he was for-holde tyl Reymondes comys and
 the menyys, in-to leynystere. Reymond turned sone to lymerike.
 and the Sorrow that was in his herte wythin, ¹ he, for al hit, as
 mych as he cowthe, made fayre semblant without¹; and to ful few
 men he shewid the aduenture that so sodeynly was byfall; and of
 ham that moste good couth, he besoght consayl and rede, what was
 ham to done. Than was comynly har consail Such, "what for the
 Erllys deth, what for Reymondys² wendinge out of the londe, that
 the Cite of lymerik, that was so ferre, and amonge so many enemys,
 that they sholde leue woyde; and al the meny, holy lede Into
 leynystere, the toynes and the castelys vpon the See forto kepe."
 Reymond, thegh loth hit was to hym, gravntyd this, and stode to
 har rede; and, for he ne found none that after hym wolde byde
 there, He yaued Obreyne, the kyng of Thomonde, the Cite to kepe
 as the kynges barovne, and toke of hym, fryst, new hostagis, and
 many new othys Sware, the toune harmles forto kepe, and the Pees
 trewely forto hold / Vpon thys, thay wentyn al out of the Cite,
 and lefte obreen and his men within / and vnnethys thay were
 Passyd the brige, that the othyr ende nas brokyn anoone ryght
 behynde ham; and the toun, that wel and faste was wallid,³ and wel
 bylid with good houses, I-herbergid of wytalis, that on euery halfe
 thedyr was broght wel Stuffid, not wythout gret Sorynys of herte,

Capitulum
 xliiij^m.
 nota De
 morte
 comitis
 Richardi.

quod dens
 ille molaris
 et magnus,
 qui tantum
 mihi doli-
 erat, jam
 cecidit.

[*Fol. 20
 b.]

usque ad
 Reimundi
 famili-
 aeque redi-
 tum.

1-1 exte-
 riore vultus
 hilaritate
 valde dissi-
 mulans.

totamque
 familiam
 integre.

Duvenaldo
 Tuheimo-
 niae prin-
 cipi.

³ aedificiis
 decenter
 ornatam,
 alimentis
 undique
 congestis
 plane
 refertam.

² de[part'ng?] at first written here.

A. D. 1176. grétte sorynesse of hert, thay sawe on fouṛ partyes I-sette aſyṛ ;
 O'Brien & thys the traytour Obren shewed openlych how me shal tryst
 burns to Iryshemen trouth. ¶ Reymond, with all the meygne, wentt hym
 Limerick. to Iryshemen trouth. ¶ Reymond, with all the meygne, wentt hym
 Richard tho to dyuelyṁ ; & the Erles body, that by hys byddyngge was I-kept 4
 Fitz- vnburyed, [was buryed] yn the modyr-church of þe Trynyte, to-for
 Gilbert, the swete rode, by *procuryngge* of sent laurence, that was yn that
 Earl of the swete rode, by *procuryngge* of sent laurence, that was yn that
 Striguil, is tyme erchebysshoppe of dyuelyṁ.

[CHAPTER XLV.]

Henry II's **A**ftyṛ that þe Erle was dede, the kynges mes- 8
 Commis- sagers, that werēṁ aftyr Reymond I-come, vpon newe
 sioners go back to him. aduenturs toke new consaylle. Thay lefte Reymond keper of
 Ireland, & wentten ham ynto Engeland hastyly to the kyng, &
 told hym of the erles deth, & the state of the lond. The kyng 12
 sent than ynto Irlande, Wyllyam aldelinessone, *procuratour* of the
 lond, with x knyghtes of hys owṁ priue meygne ; & with hym, Thoṁ
 de Courcy with other x ; Robert steuenessone & Myles de Cogaṁ,
 þat al two yeṛ yn engeland & yn gascoyne nobly haddeṁ with the 16
 kyng I-be, come þaṁ ynto Irland with xxⁱ knyghtes. Tythynges
 come to Reymond that thay waṛ arryued ; & he anon-ryght went
 ayeyns ham with mych gladnesse * & fayr felawshyppe of knyghtes
 to Weysford. Ther he yeld vp to Wyllyam, as to Seneschal from 20
 the kyng I-sent, al the kynges townes, & hys castels, & al the
 ostages of Irland. Wyllyam sawe Reymond wyth so many & so
 fayr yonglynges bylad, & beheld Meylleṛ & other knyghtes of hys
 kyn, fayr & ryhely y-wepned of o maner vepne, wel thrytty, vpon 24
 ful fayṛ hors, sheldes about haṛ nekkes, & spers yn hand, pleyngge
 to-geddre ynto al the feldes : he turned hym to hys men, & seyð al
 soft, "Thys pryð shal be pute In, ar hyt be lange, & pese
 sheldes to-dreued." Ffro that tyme euer aftyr, these & meste al 28
 otheṛ *proc[ur]atours* yn Irland, as thoght hyt weṛ by on oth
 togeddre I-swore, throgth ond & enuy ne stynt neuer to besech
 Reymond & Meilleṛ, Robertes sones, & Moryce, & al that kynrede,
 al þe enuy that þay myght & durst ; for þys ys euermore haṛ 32
 wayte & haṛ aduentur : euer whaṁ grete nede byfelle yn tyme of
 weṛ, thay war lef & derward, & the formeste to I-clepped, & to
 bataylle, throgth hardynes, formest & fyrst redy ; whaṁ non ned was,

Nota the goodness of Geraud.

Henry II sends Wm. Fitz-Audeline and others to Ireland.

[* Fol. 21 b.].

Reimund yields all his towns and host-ages. His fine retinue excites Fitz-Audeline's envy,

and he always works against Reimund and the Geraldines.

thay Saw on foure Parties sette a fyre. And thus the tray-toure A. D. 1176.
 Obreyne shewid opynly how we sholde trust to Iryssh-men trouth // *corpus*
 Reymond, with al the meny, went to deuelyñ; and the Erlis body *comitis*
 that by his byddyngge was kepte vnburied [was buried] in þe modyr *quod . . .*
 church of the trynyte, to-for the Swete Rode, by procuryngge of *fueral re-*
 Seynt laurance, that was in that tyme Archebyschope of Deuelyn. *servatum*
. . . in ec-
clesia . . .
est tumu-
latum.

[CHAPTER XLV.]

Afyr that the Erle was dede, the kynges mes- *Capitulum*
 sangers, that weryn afyr Reymond come, vpon new *xlv^m.*
 aduentures toke new consail. Thay lefte Reymond keper of *Nota the*
 Irland, and thay went into Englande hastely to the kyngge, and tolde *goodnys*
 hym of the Erle-is deth, and the state of the londe // The kyngge *of Geral-*
 sende than into Irland, Willam Aldeliny's Sone, Procuratoure of the *dynes.*
 londe, x. knyghtis of his owyn Pryue meny; And with hym Ihon de *Nota de*
 Cursi, with othyr x; Robert Steuen-es [sone] and Miles de cogan, *adventu*
 that al two yere in England and in gascoyn nobely haddyn with *Willelmi*
 the kyngge be, come than Into Irland with xx^{ti}. knyghtis. Thythynges *Addelini*
 come to Reymond that thay ware londid; and he anone-ryght went *flij, et*
 agaynes ham with mych gladnys, and fayre felochipp of knyghtes, *Iohannis*
 to weysforde. Ther he yaue to Willam, as to Senescal from the *de Cursi,*
 kyngge sende, al the kynges townes, and his castelis, and al the *in Hiber-*
 hostages of Irland. Willam Saw Reymond with so many and so *niam.*
 fayre yonglynges *Bylad, And Be-Helde Meyler and Othyr *1 Super-*
 Knyghtes of His Kyn, fayre and riche wepenyd of o maner *biam*
 wepyn, wel xxx^{ti}, vpon ful fayre hors, sheldys aboute har neckys, *hanc, in*
 and sperris in honde, Pleyngge to-gadderes in-to al the feldys. *brevi com-*
 He turned hym to his men, and sayde al softe, "This Pryde shal *primam, et*
 be Put In¹ ar hit be lange, and this sheldys to-dreued." Fro that *clipeos*
 tyme euer afyr, and thes and most al othyr procuratoures in *istos*
 Irland, as thegh hit were by one othe to-giddyr Sworne, throgh *dispergam.*
 hate and envy ne stynte thay neuer to malyngne agaynys Reymond *[*Fol. 21*
 and meyler, Robert-es Sonnes and Morices, and al the kynred of *a.]*
 geraldines, al the envy that thay myght and durste; for this is *Nota de*
 euer-more har abydyngge and har aduenture: Euer whan grete *geraldinis.*
 nede bifel in tyme of werre, thay wer lefe and derwarde, and the *Nota*
 fryst to be callid for bolnys, and to battail fryst redy; whan no *causam*
invidie
inter
aldelini
filium et
geraldinos.
Semper in
armata
militia
cari.

A. D. 1176. anoōn̄ thay wēr loth, & I-pute abake ; hēr felowshyp I-left ȳn yurne
to harme. Na the wodde of hār gentryce, throḡh non enuy ne
myght neuer be I-rotet ; for euer ham spryngyth new spourges, of
whych the myght yn the lond nys nat lytelle. Who beth that 4
kepeth the contreys ? the Geraudynes : Who throḡh þurleth the
hostes ? the Geraudynes : Who ben that fomen adredeth ? þe
Geraudines : Who ben that enuy bacbyteth ? þe Geraudines.

Had justice been done them, they'd have held the land in peace. Hade thay I-found prynece yn any tyme, that hār stalwarthnesse 8
ham had y-yold, as thay worthy wēr, yn good pees & stydfast
hadden I-broḡht the state of Irland. Bot thegh thay nededen
neuer so well, thay ne hade bot lytele thanke, othēr noon ; hār
trauaylle yuel I-yold, & ouerthrow yn hār goodnesse, & mysbeleue 12
& bacbyttinge of hār stalwarthnesse ; & to othēr, the prynces
trysten, wyt whych no stalwarthnesse was I-founde, ne no power
hadde well to done *wit*hout helpe & socoūr of ham. And also
Aldelinese-sonne, at hys comynge ynto Irland, he wente from toūn to 16
toūn vpōn þe see, & proḡh soḡht the Cyttes thēr plente was of
mete & drynke ; bot the monteynes, & þe londes *wit*-In, nold he
neuer come neḡh. gold & syluyre, whār-of mych plente was yn þe
lond, wel hungrylych he gaderede, to helpe-*wit*h pledynge & 20
pullynge of pees men, & noḡh of theues ne of reuers. In that
tyme, about myd-heruest, Moryce fyzt-Geraud deyed, nat *wit*hout
gret Sorynesse of al hys, & mych harme & lost to al Irland ; ffor
he was a man methefull, suttell, & stalwarth : trewēr man ne 24
stydfaster mān, ne left he non yn Irland. ¶ Wyllyam adelinese-
sonne ran Moryce sonnes to harme anon, & ne stynt neuer tyl he
hadde I-take of hym þe Castel of Wykelowe wyth falsnesse. of
Reymond & Robert steuenesse-sonne, he name the londes that thay 28
hadden yn the vale of dyuelyn & yn Ophelayn ; & othēr that
hadden londes ȳn pes, he name thay londes to the kynges behoud,
& delyuered ham londes furthyre ȳn marche, & yn perryll nexth
hār fomen : al *wit*h vnryght, & by hys owne wyll ; ffor thēr ys 32
nothynḡe so bold ne so kene as ys that mān that ys of noḡht
I-come, Whan he ys an-heḡh I-broḡht, & vnkyndely I-sette yn
maystry. ¶ Wyllyam was a man mych of body, & of makynge ;
* good met-yeuer ; fre & corteys by semblant ; bot al that he dyde any 36

nede was anoon they were hatyd *and* Putte abake, her fellochip A. D. 1176.
left *and* turne to harme. // Na the wodd of har gentryce, through Nota de geraudynes.
non envy ne myght, neuer be y-roted, for euer ham spryngyth
new Spourgis, of whych the myght in the londe is not lytell.
What ben thay that kepyth the contrayes? the Geraudynes. Who Qui sunt qui penetrant hostis penetralia?
throw thurlyth the hostis? the geraudines. Who ben that Enemys
dreddyth? the geraudynes. What ben thay that envy bacbityth?
the geraudines. Hade thay found prynce in any tyme that har
streynth ham wolde yeue, as thay worthy wer to haue / in good
pees *and* stydfast thay haddyn broght the state of Irland. But Note the harde ad-venture of Geraldines.
tegh thay euer so wel had done, thay hadd but lytyll change,
or noone, for her laboure. But euer thay profited in har goodnys ;
and mysbeleue and bacbitynge, of hare boldnys. And to othyr
the Pryncis trustyn, wyth whych no boldnys was founde, ne
Power had wel to do / *with*-out helpe and Socoure of ham //
And also Aldelines Sonne, at his comynge into Irland, he went
from town to town vpon the See-syde, *and* throw soght the Citteis Nota quo tempore mortuus erat ille Mauricius geraldii filius.
ther Plente was of mette and drynke; but the montayns *and* the
londe *with*-In, he wolde neuer come ney. / golde *and* syluer, wherof
mych Plente was in the lond, wel hungryly he gadderid to-giddy,
with pledynge and Pullynge of peese men, *and* not of theuys ne of
Robers. In þat tyme about Mid-heruest, Morice fiz-geraud deyed,
not *with*-out grette Sorrow of al his, *and* mych harme and lostes to
al Irlande // For he was a man meteful, Suttyl *and* bolde : trewer
man, ne stydfastyr man, ne lefte he none in Irlande // Willam Descriptio Maurici fiz geraud. (See p. 76. 7.)
Aldelinys sone ran Morices sone to harme, *and* styntid neuer til he
hadd take of hym the castel of Wickelow wyth falsnes. Of fraudulenter eripuit.
Reymond *and* of Robert Steuenes-sone, he toke the londys that
they hadd in the vale of Deuelyn, *and* in Ophelan; *and* othyr that
hadd londis in Pees, he toke thay londys to the kynges be-howe,
and delyuerid ham landys furthyr in Marche, *and* in Peril nexte ¹ Asperius nihil est humili, cum surgit in altum. Claud. Eutrop. i. 181.
har enemys, al *with* vnryght *and* by his owyn will. For ther is
nothyng so bolde ne so kene, as is that man that is of noght come,
whan he is an-hey broght, *and* vnkyndely sette in Maystry ¹ //
Willam was a man mych of body *and* of makyng, good mete-
* yeuer, fre *and* corteyse By Semblant. But ale that He did any [*Fol. 21 b.]

Bad character of William de Fitz-Audeline.

to wysshype al hyt was yn spyngre, felonye, & trecherye; euer he shedde attyr vndyr hony. To-day he wold do the wyrshyp^s, to-morow he wold the reue & do shendshype; the meke & þe lotles he vndedde, þe sterne & the hawteyn he plessed; softe with 4 wyld men, & hard with pees men; of fayr spech, soft, fals, trecheur; argñ & enuyous, dronklewe & lecheour.

A. D. 1177.

[CHAPTER XLVI.]

John de Courci sees Fitz-Audeline's rascality.

Iohan de Courcy saw that al thyngre that Willyam dydde was couetise And trecherye, & that he nas 8 nothyngre trewe to ham that vndyr hym weŕ, ne dredlyche to the mysdoynge. he chase hym of the meygne of dyuelyn a few, bot thay weŕ good & stalwarth & hardy throug al thyngre, so

He gets troops from Dublin; invades Ulster,

that he hadde xx^{iiij} knyghtes, fyfty squyers, & fotmen as myght 12 be by ecc, & went hym ynto Vlnesteŕ, whare non engeleshe-man I-wepned to-foŕ hym was I-seye. Than was fulfilled a prophecye of Merlyn, that thys seyde: "A whyt knyght, syttinge on a whyt hors, berynge fowles yn hys sheld, shal forrest assayll 16 Vlnestre." Thys I^hon was a man ful whyt, & rood þan vpon a whyt hors, & baŕ yn hys sheld, ernes I-peynted. he went hym throug Myth & throug Vryel thre dayes goynge; & the forth day erlych, come to doune without any lete of any fomañ. 20

and takes Down.

King Mac Donlevy flees.

Vnwyttinge he come; In he wente. dyuelyn, the kynge, was shorthlych a-fryght of so derne comynge, left the toun & flow; the meygne, that was myssayse & hungry, fond ther mete & drynke Inowe, & pylfre of gold & syluer & clothes, & eke whaŕ-wyth thay 24 waŕ wel arrayed, & har hert wel comforted. Into the toun was

The Pope's Legate, Vivian, tries to get rid of De Courci,

than I-come a legat of Rome, that hete Vyuyen, & was y-come out of scotland. Thys legat was youre aboute, pees to make betwene the kynge & Iohñ: myche he spake & mych he hym profred, & 28 more he behete, & trewage to bereñ euery yeŕ to Englyssh-men, by so that he wold the lond leue, & turne ayeyne. Myche he spake theŕ-of, & mych hym bysoght; bot nocht he wold hym hyŕ, ffor hys thoght was al I-turned, the lond for to wyn, or the lyf to forlese. 32 Donleue saw that he, wyth fayŕ spech ne fayr beheste, nocht ne myght spede; he sent anon aftyr hys folke, & withyn the viij day he gadered to-gyddyŕ an hoste of ten thousand men, stalwarth

who means to win or die.

to wyrchyppe, al Hit was in Spyng, felony, and trechery; euer he shed Venym vndyr hony. Tho day he wolde do the wyrchipp; to-morrow he wolde the rew, *and* do shenshipp. the meke and the buxum he vndid; the sterne and hawteyn he Plesyd; Softe with wyld men, harde with Pees men; of fayre spech, Softe, fals trechoure; feynthe *and* Envyous, dronklewe *and* lecherere.

[CHAPTER XLVI.]

A. D. 1177.

IOhan de Cursy Saw that al thyng that willam did was couetyse and trecherye, and that he was nothyng trew to ham that vndyr hym were, ne dredfull to his enemys. He chose hym of the meny of Deuelyn a few, but thay were good *and* bolde, and hardy throgth al thyng, So that he hadd xxij^{ti} knyghtis, fyfty Squyeres, *and* footmen as myght be by thre hundrid; and wente hym to vlyster, whar noone Englyssh-man wepenyd to-for hym was seyn. Than was fulfillid a prophesy of merlyng, that thus sayd: "a whyte knyght, syttyng on a whyte hors, berryng fowlis on his shelde, shal formyste assayle vlystere." This Ihon was a man ful whyte, and rode vpon a whyte hors, and bare in his shelde, ernys y-peyntyd. he went throw myth *and* throw Vriel thre dayes goyng; and the fourth day Erlych, come to doune, wythout any lette of any enemy. Vn-wyttyng he come; In he wente. Dunleue, the kyng, was schortlych agaste of so suddeyn comyng, lefte the toun and flow; the mayny, that was myssaysid and hungry, founde ther mette and drynke y-now, and Pylfre of golde and Syluyr *and* clothis, *and* also wher-with thay wer wel arrayed, and her herte wel confortid. In-to the toun was than y-come a legat of Rome that was callid Vyuyen and was come out of scotlande. this legat was besy about, Pees to make be-twen the kyng *and* Ihoñ. mych he spake, *and* mych he hym proferid; *and* more he promysyd, *and* trewage to bere euery yere to Englyssh-men, So that he wolde the lond lewe, *and* turne agayn. gretly her-of he spoke *and* be-soght; but nocht he wolde hym hyre; For his thoght was al turned, the londe forto wynne, or his lyfe for-sake. Dounleue Saw that he, wyth fayre speche ne fayre promes, nothyng myght spede¹. he send anoone aftyr his Pepill, *and* wyth-in viij^e dayes he gaddrid to-giddy an hoste of x. Mⁱ

Descriptio
Willelmi
Aldelmi.Capitulum
xlvi^m.argent
iiij egles
displayed
gules
crowned
armed and
beaked
golde.Romanae
sedis
legatus.
multa
quidem
verba sua-
soria nec
persua-
soria pro-
ponebat.¹ se verbis
minime
profectu-
rum.

Mac Don-levy be- sieges De Courci in Down. to fyght, & besegete staluartly the Cyte of doun *per* Iohñ was In ; for yn thys lond, as yn al otheṛ, the northeren men ben stordyer & smerteṛ to fyght than otheṛ. Iohñ saw thay hostes comynge to hym-ward : thegh̄ he fewe weṛ, natheles thay waṛ al hardy & stal- 4 warth he chase ; & leuer hym was, out wend, & *with* streynth to assaye the aduenturs of battaylle, than yn the lytel feble fortelet that he yn & herne of the toun yn so lytel whyle hadde arerede, amyd hys fomen, beseget & hungrod, deye. He went hym out to 8 hard fyght : & whan thay hadde fyrste, from feṛ, I-suywed har arowes, thay smytten theṛ aftyre hertelych to-gydder, sper ayeyne sper, swerd ayeyne sparth ; & many one the lyf ther forlese. Bot who hadde y-sey Iohnes dynttes *with* swerd, how he smote of *pat* man 12 pe heed from the scholderes, that man the arme & pe shuldre from pe body, that man the heed I-clouen fer doun * ynto the body, he myght wel sygge that hys myght & hys mayn oght wel be I-preysed.

[*Fol. 22 b.] Thegh many waṛ yn thys fyght that stalwarthly dydden, natheles, 16 Roger the power, that theṛ-aftyr was of grete myght yn Osserye & yn the Contrey of leḡhlyn, was the otheṛ that best dydde. Aftyr grete fyght & lange, *pat* theṛ was of wel vnlyche hostes, at pe laste the Iresshe host was ouercome & I-scomfyte ; many I-slawe by the 20 see strond whyder-ward they flowen : than was fulfilled a prophete that Colmkylle seyde of thys fyght : he seyde, ' that so many men shold be I-slaw yn that place, that haṛ fomen myght waden to the knees yn her blode.' & so hyt was than ; ffor as thay flowen to-for 24 ham yn the slyme, thay folweden aftyr & slowen ham ; & as thay dyueden adoun, the blode of ham that wareñ I-slawe, & fleted abouen, toke to pe knee of ham that slowen ham. The same prophete seyde also, 'that a pouere mane, & as thought he weṛ flow or 28 bashed out of otheṛ landes, *with* lytel folk shold come ynto doun¹, & the toun wynne, wythout soccoure of any herrer' ; & otheṛ many fyghtes & aduentures of thyng that yn that contray shold betyde, whych al openly weṛ fulfilled yn Iohñ de Courcy. That same 32 boke, Iñon hadde an Iresshe I-wrytte, & was hym ther-aftyr as shewer of al hys dedys. In the same boke was eke I-found, that a mañ *with* folke I-wepned shold, *with* strenynth, the walles of Waterford to-breken ; & *with* grette slaght of pe cytzeynes, the toun 36

De Courci leaves his corner of the town, sallies out, fights splendidly, backt well by Roger le Poer, and at last wins. His men walk up to their knees in Irish blood on the slimy strand [1 ? dyn ..]

De Courci has his Victory written in Irish.

men, bolde to fyght / and besegyt boldely the Cite of doun ther
 Ihon was In / For in this lond, as in al othyr, the nordryn men
 ben sturdier *and* smyrtyr to fyght than othyr. Ihon Saw the
 hostys comynge to-wardes hym, *and* chose; and lewyr was, out wende,
and wyth streynth to assay the aduentures of battayl, than in the
 lytel feble fortelet, that he in *and* herne of the toun in so lytel
 tyme hadd arrerid, amyd his enemys be be-segid, and to dey with
 hungyr. he went out to hard fight. and when thay had fryste,
 frome fer shote her arrowys, thay smytten aftyr hertely to-giddyr,
 spere agaynys spere, Swerde agaynys Spare; *and* many there the
 lyfe loste. But who had y-sey Ihonys strokys wyth Swerd, how
 he smote Of that man the hede frome the sholdris, that man the
 Arme and the shuldyr * frome the body, Hee myght wel Sey, that
 His myght and His mayn oght Wel to be Praysid. Thegh many
 wer in this fyght that boldely did, Natheles Rohere le Power, that
 ther-aftyr was of gret myght in Ossory and in the contrey of
 leghlyn, was the othyr that best did. Aftyr grete *and* lange
 fyghtynge of wel vnlych hostis¹, at the last, the Irysh hoste was
 ouercome *and* scomfited, *and* many slayne by the strondis syde
 whedyr thay flowe / than was fulfillid a prophesy that colmekyl²
 Sayde of this fyght. He sayde, ' that So many men sholde be slayn
 in that Place, that har enemys myght wadyn to the knees in her
 blode' / And so hit was than. For as thay fleddyng to-for ham in
 the Slyme, thay folwedyn aftyr and kyllid ham; and as thay
 dyuedyn done, the blode of ham that weryn slayne, *and* fletid
 abow, toke to the knees of them that ham Slayne. The same
 Prophet sayde also, ' that a pouere man, and as thegh he were flow
 or bashed but of othyr landys, with lytel folke sholde come to
 doune, and the toune wyne wyth-out Soccoure of any herrer'; and
 othyr many fightes and aduentures of thyng that in that contray
 sholde befall, whych al opynly wer fulfillid in Ihon de Cursy.
 That same boke, ther-aftyr had Ihon de Cursy on Irysh writte,
and was to hym ther-aftyr as merrowre of al his dedys. In pe^e
 sayde boke is also fovnde, that a man with pepil wepenyd, sholde
 with streynth the wallis of watyrford breke; *and* with grete slaght

*quam exili
 municipio,
 quod in
 urbis
 angulo
 tenuiter
 crexerat.*

[*Fol. 22
 a.]

¹ *nimis
 impari
 certamine.
 per mari-
 namglisim.*
² *Hibernici
 Kolumbae.
 Prae glisis
 namque
 mollitie,
 dum ad
 ima pene-
 traret
 humana
 pondero-
 sitas,
 terrae
 lubricae
 sanguis
 profluus
 superfi-
 ciam
 tenens,
 genua
 crurague
 de facili
 pertinge-
 bat.*

A. D. 1177. St. Columba's prophecies fulfilled by De Courci. wyð; & fro thennes, by Weysford, wend to dyuelyn *wit/out* any lette; & þe cytè wyn: & al þis ys found fulfilled of the Erl: he seyð eke 'that the Cytè of Iymeryke shold of Englysshe-men shold be twyes I-lefte, & at the thrydde tyme y-hold': & so hyt was, on 4 tyme of Reymond, another of phylepe de Bruse, as hyt openlyer shal be I-shewed yn hys own place. Ther-of þe prophecye was thys y-seyd, 'þe cytè thrise I-soght, at þe thryd tyme shal be I-hold.'

De Courci had Fights 1. and 2. at Down; Twey grete fyghtes, Iohñ ther ledde & wan at doun; that oon aftyr 8 candelmase, as hyt ys I-told, þat other at mydsomyre, wher he, wyth fewe men, ouercome the battaylle of fyftene thousand, & slow of ham ful many. The þrydde was at ferly at a pray-takyng: thar thay come throggh a narowe pas, and hadde so styf fyght, & so stronge, that 12 hys meñ was, some y-slawe, & the oper dele so dyscomfyte ynto al þe woddes, that vnneth ther be-left hym wyth aleueth thousande; & he, as man wonderly stalwarth, *wit/h* so fewe wyth hym, whan thay hadde har hors I-loste, thay went a-fote al 16 y-wepned: a xxx^{ti} myl weye thay helden the fyght of har fomen; & twey dayes & two nyght thay wañ fastyng, tyl thay come to hys 4. at Uriel; castel. The ferth fyght was yn vryel; ther many of hys weren 5. at Newry Bridge. I-sley, & the oper descomfyte, & put ham to flyght: the fyfte at 20 yueres brygge, as he come wyth fewe men out of England; natheles, ther he ouercome, & slowe ful many, & come hol & sond to hys owne. Thus yn thre grete fyghtes he wan the ouer-hand; & yn twey, thegh he harme tholled, he dydde hys fomen mych 24 more. Iohñ was a man whyte & fayre; of Iymmes bony & synowy; mych of body; non hardyer than he, stalwarth, & fyghter stronge of yought; yn euery fyght the fyrst, & the meste perrylle he wold * euer be In; he was so coueytouse of fyght, & so bernynge whan he 28 hoste lad, & come to fyght, that he neuer wold hym hold as leder, bot *wyt/h* the fyrst wold yn smyte, som whyle behynd, theñ most perrylle was, that oft al the oste was the vnredyeñ, and thoght that they wer ouercome, and al hadden forlore: & thegh he weñ yn 32 wepne vnmetly stordy, & sterne, out of wepne natheles, he was meke and sobre, & mych wyrshypped god & holy chyrche, & yn al thynge he leuet god and hys seruyce; & al that hym betyd, he thanked god that hym the grace sent. He spoused Godefreys 36

Jn. de Courci described.

[* Fol. 23 a.] He loved fighting, and often attackt his foe in rear.

of the Citteseynes, the toun wyn : And al this fund fulfillid of the A. D. 1177.
 Erle. He sayde also that the Cite of Iymerike, of Englysh-men *ab Anglorum gente bis deserendam, et tertio retinendam.*
 twyes sholde be lefte, and the thyrd tyme sholde be holde. And
 So hit was, on tyme of Reymonde, a-nothyr of Phylip de bruse,
 as hit opynlyer shal be shewid in his owyn Place. Therof the
 prophesy was thus sayde : " The Cite thryse soght, at the thyrd
 tyme shal be holde," Two grete fyghtis, Ihon ther abode, *and* ham
 ouercomyd at down / that oone aftyr candylmasse, as hit is tolde /
 that othyr, aftyr mydsomer, wher he, *with* few men, did ouercome (June 24.)
 the battail o xv. M^r, *and* Slayne of ham ful many. The thyrd was
 at ferly, at a pray takyn : thar thay come throw a narrow Paas, and *in praedae captione.*
 had so styfe fyght, that his men was, some slayne, *and* othyr Part so
 descomfite in-to al the woddys, that vnneth *with* hym was lefte M^r ;
 and he, as man woundyrly bolde, *with* so few *with* hym, Whan *Iipse vero, vir virtutis invictae, cum tantilla suorum paucitate.*
 thay hadd har hors loste, thay went afoote al wepenyd : xxx^{ti} myle
 wey thay heldyn the fyght of har ennemys ; *and* two dayes and
 two nyghtes thay wer fastyng, til thay come to his castel. the
 iiij^e fyght was in Vriel, ther many of his were slayn, and the othyr
 dyscomfite, and Put ham to flyght ; the v. fyght at yuores bryge, as
 he come *with* few men out of England. natheles, ther he ouercome, *apud pontem Ivori.*
 and slayne ful many, and come hole and Sounde to his owyn.
 Thus in thre grete fyghtis he had the ouer-hand ; *and* in two, *Descriptio Iohann[is] de Curcy.*
 thegh he loste the ouer-hand, he did his ennemys mych more //
 Ihon was a man whyte *and* fayre ; of lymmes, bony and * Synowy ; *[*Fol. 22 b.]*
 myche of Body ; noone Hardier than Hee ; Bolde, and fyghter
 stronge of youth : in euery fyght the fryst, and the meste *peril*
 he wolde euer be In / he was So covetouse of fyght, and So
 bernynge whan he hoste ladd, *and* come to fyght, that he hym
 neuer wolde holde as ledere, but *with* the fryste wolde smyte, *ducem exuens, et militem induens.*
 Sumtyme be-hynnde, ther more Peril was, that ofte al the hoste
 was the vnredyer, and thoght that thay wer ouercome, and al
 haddyn for-lore. And thegh he were in wepyn vnmetly sturdy *in armis immoderatus.*
 and Sterne, Out of wepyn natheles he was meke and sobyr, *and*
 mych vynchippid god and holy church, and in al thyng he lowid
 god *and* his service ; and all that hym befel, he thankyd good that
 hym the grace sende. He Spousyd Godfredes doghtyr, the kyng

A. D. 1177. doghter, the kynges of Mane; & aftyr many selcouth battaylles that
 At last, he dydde, nat wythout grete labour & perrylle of lyf & myche
 De Courci myssayse, at the last he was all aboue, & clenlych hadde ouercomen.
 overcame all foes. He casteled the lond yn couenable places, & such pes made, that non 4
 Not one of better ne myght be, ne stedfaster. Bot gret wonder ys, & nat bot
 the 4 great as god hyt wold, that thay four grete postès of the conquest of
 Pillars of Irland, namely, Robert steuenes-sonne, heruy of Mountynorthy,
 the Con-quest of Reymon le Gros, and Ihon de Courcy, mythten neuer haue 8
 Ireland had a child. chylchildren of her spoused wyues. Thus mych we haue shortly I-told
 of Ihon de Courcy; & the other parte of hys stalwarth gastes,
 we leueth to wryte to other that ham wrytte wyllen, & turneth
 ayeine ther we afore lefte.

12

[CHAPTER XLVII.]

The Legate Vivian holds a Synod at Dublin, March 13, in Henry II's favour, and gives the English leave to take food from churches.

Wiuyen; that in-to Irlande was legat I-comen,
 come to dyuelyn; theder he made come to-for
 hym al the bysshoppes & the clergie of Irland & held hys senne.
 ther he shewed openly the kynges ryght of Engelond to Irland, 16
 & the popes graunt, & hys confyrmacion; &, vp mansynge, forbed
 lered & lewed, that non neuere so hardy to comen ayeyns the
 kynges trouth. &, fore the Iresshe-men wer I-woned to doñ al
 har vytayllys yn chyrcches, he yawe the Englysshe-men leue, that 20
 whað me ladde hostes, & myghten nowher elles wytayll fynd,
 that yn chyrch war I-found, me shold hardyly out take, & yeue
 the kepers of the chyrch the worth, as ryght wer.

[CHAPTER XLVIII.]

Miles de Cogan with 500 men, invades Connaght.

Afty that, Miles de Cogan, that vnder Aldelinesse- 24
 sone was keper & conestable of dyuelyn, wyth fowrty
 knyghtes, of whych Rolf, Robertes sone, fytz-esteuene, was one,
 I-sette mayster ouer ham vnder Myles, & two hundret other
 an hors, & thre hundret bowmen, passeden the water of shynnen, 28
 & wentten ynto Connaght, whar Englesshe-men was neuere er
 comen. The men of Connaght wer I-ware of har comes; thay
 drowen ham ynto erth-hous many; & al the vytaylle that thay
 ne myght nat take wyth ham, thay put yn chyrcches; & tounnes & 32
 chyrcches thay setten al afy & branten. & yn despyte of the En-
 glesshe-men, & yn hope pat god shold take wrech of ham, thay toke

The Irish take to earth-houses, and burn their buildings.

of man; *and* aftyr many Selchouth battalys that he did, not
 wyth-out grete laboure *and* Peril of lyfe *and* mych myssayse, *And*
 at the last he was al abow, *and* clenly hadd ouercome. He
 castelid the londe in behowabyll Placys; *and* Suche Pes made,
 that noone bettyr ne myght be, ne stydfastyr. But hit is grete
 wondyr, *and* not but as god hit wolde, that thay iii^e grete Postes
 of the conqueste of Irland, Namely, Robert Steuenes-sone, heruey
 of Mountmorthy, Reymond le gras / *and* Ihon de Cursy, myghten
 neuer haue childe of her Spousyd wyues / Thus mych we haue
 Shortely tolde of Ihon de Curcy; *And* the othyr Parte of his
 bolde gestis, we lewyth to write to otheres that ham write wille,
And turnyth agaynē ther we aforē leftē.

[CHAPTER XLVII.]

VIuyen, that into Irland was legate, come to deuelyn: *Capitulum*
 thedyr he made come to-for hym al the bischopis *xlviij^m.*
convocata
 the clergy of Irland, *and* helde his Senne. ther he Shewid opynly the
 kyngis ryght of England to Irland, *and* the Popis graunte *Dubliniae*
episco-
 his confirmacion; *and*, vpon Payn of Cursynge chargid both lerrid
porum
synodo.
and lewyd, that noone neuer so hardy to come agaynys the kyngis
 trouthe. *And*, for the Irysh-men wer wonyd to do al har vitalys
 in churchis, he yaue the Englysh-men leue, that whan thāy ladd
 hostis, *and* myght no vytalis ellys fynde, that that in church were
 founde, thay sholde hardely out-take, *and* yeue the keperes of the
 church the worthe, as ryght were. *ad ecclesi-*
arum
refugia
victualia
transfer-
rentur.

[CHAPTER XLVIII.]

Aftyr that, Miles de Cogan, that vndyr adelines-sone was
 keper *and* constabil of Deuelyn, with xl. knyghtes, of wych
 Rolfe, Robert-es sone, fitz-Steuens, was one, y-sette Maystyr ouer ham
 vndyr Milis, *and* two C an hors, CCC bowmen, Passyd the watyr of
 Shynnyñ, *and* went Into Connaght / wher englysh-men was neuer
 therto-forne. The men of connaght wer y-ware of har comynge /
¹ thay drew ham into Erthe-hous many; *and* al p^e wytalis that thay
 ne myght take with ham, thay Put in churches; *and* touñes *and*
 churches thay sette afyre *and* brantyn¹. *and* in dyspyte of the
 englysh-men, *and* in trust that god wold do vengeance on ham, thay
Capitulum
xlviij^m.
¹ *urbibus*
undique et
villis igne
proprio
combustis;
alimentis
quoque
cunctis,
quae
hypogaeis
subter-
raneis
abscondere
non pote-
rant, simul
cum eccle-
siis igne
consumptis.

A. D. 1177. þe rodes crucefyed, & ymages of haloweñ, & kesten to-for ham ynto
 The English advance to Tuam, but find no food, and retreat safely to Dublin, beating King Roderic of Connaught on the way.
 al the felde. The Englesshe meygne wentten tyl thay come to tuen, & thē thay abodde viij dayes yn bare lond & blote. And whan thay myght no mane fynd, ne nothyng wher-by thay myght 4
 lyue, thay turned ayeyne to the shynnen. ther thay found ayeyns ham, Oconghour yn a wodde, wyth thre grete hostes. the Engelesshe boldly smytteñ vpon ham, & slowe of ham ful many, passeden oñ, & come to dyuelyñ al sound, out-tak þre meñ, that yn that fyght 8
 weren I-lefte.

[CHAPTER XLIX.]

Sone thēr aftyr̄, Aldelinessone was I-sent aftir̄ ynto Engelande, that no good yn Irland dydde bot oon, that, by *procuryng* of hym, an holy baghell & of 12
 grete vertue, that me cleped Ihesus baghel, was I-broght from Ardmagh to dyuelyñ, & yet ys at the chyrch of the Try-nyte: & come * ynto Irland Hugh de Lacy, heye Seneshal of al the lond, & Robert de Power wyth hym, Conestable of Water-16
 ford. Myles de Cogan & Robert steuenessoñ wentten also ouer the see ynto Engeland; bot thay comen sone ayeyne, & phylepe de Bruse wyth ham; & hadde the kyng I-yeuen ham thre, al the lond of Desmond. Robert & Myles hadden the south Con-20
 trey, that ys to wytteñ, from lysmore al aboute Corke vii Cantredes, saue the kyng the Cytè of Corke, wyth þe next cantrede. Phylpe de Bruse, the kyng yaf al the Contrey of lymeryke, saue the Cytè & hys next cantred: these thre I-feffed 24
 to-geddēr, come ouer ynto Irland yn o felewshyppe, & arryueden at Waterford, & fro thennes thay wentteñ to Corke al harmles. Thay wār thār faȳr receyued of þe Cytteyns, & of a knyght that was kepēr of the Cytè, that hete Rychard of Londone. Whān 28
 thay hadde I-broght to pees Demot Mac charthy, prynce of desmone, & othēr many of the contrey of moche power, Robert and myles deled betwen ham the vij cantredes next the Cytè; & felle by lot¹ to Robert, thre on the eeste syde; Myles, four yn the weste; 32
 mo to the on than to the othēr, for the lond was wors; the keypyng of the Cytè comune to ham bothe; the renth & the trywage

¹ MS. bot.

toke the roodys crucyfyed, *and* ymagis of Sayntis, *and* kesten to-for ham into al the feldys. The Englis-men wentyn tyl thay come to tuem, And ther abode viij dayes in bare * Londe ande Blote¹. And When thay myght no man fynde, ne nothyng Wherby thay myght lyue, thay turned agayn to the Shynnyng. ther thay found agaynys ham / Oconghoure in a wodde, *with* thre grete hostis. The englysh boldely smytten vpon ham, *and* Slow of ham ful many, Passyd ouer, and come to Deuelyn al sounde, out-take thre men that in that fyght weryn lefte. /

A. D. 1177.
in hostili terra.
 [*Fol. 23 a.]
terram alimentis vacuam inueniens. tribus tantum arcariis amissis.

[CHAPTER XLIX.]

Some therafter, adelines Sone was sende aftyr in-to England, that no good in Irland hadde but oone, that, by *procuryng* of hym, an holy baghel and of grete Vertu, that is callid *Iesus*² baghel, was broght frome Ardmagh to Deuelyn, and yet is at the Trynyte church // And come Into Irland Hugh de lacy, hey Seneschal of al the londe³, And Robert de Power *with* hym Constable of watyrford, Miles de Cogan *and* Robert S[t]euens-Sone wentyn ouer the See also in-to England; but thay comyn Sone agayn, and Philip de bruse *with* hame, and the kyng yeue ham thre al the londe of Desmonde. Robert and Miles haddyn the South contrey, that is to Say, from lysmore al aboute Corke, vije candredes, Saue the kyng the Cite of Corke, *with* the nexte candrede; Philip de Bruse the kyng yeue al þe contrey of lymeryk, Saue the Cite and his nexte Candrede: thes thre, feffyde to-giddy, come ouer Into Irland in oo fellochipp, and londyn at Watyrford, and fro thens thay wenten to Corke al harmeles. Thay wer thar fayre reseweyd of the Citteseyns, and of a knyght that was keper of the citte, that was callid Richarde of london. Whan thay hadd broght to pees Dermot Maccarthy, Prince of Desmon, and othyr many of the contrey of mych Powere, Robert and Miles delid betwen ham the vij Candredes nexte the Cite; and fell by lotte to Robert, thre on the Este syde; Miles foure in the weste: mo to the on than to the othyr, for the londe was wors; the keypyng of the Cite comyn to ham both. the rent and the triwage of the othyr

Capitulum xlix^m.
baculum virtuosissimum, quem baculum Jesu vocant.
³ *generalem Hiberniae procuratorem.*
Trans-euntes igitur in Hiberniam mense Novembri, cum triplici familia, tres viri confodati simul et confoderati.

² Ihe, MS.

A Cantred of the othe^r fou^r & xx cantredes, as hyt wold falle, eyn to dele
 is 100 townlandz. betwen ham: & ys a cantrede to sygge, an hundret tond lond.
 Robert Fitz-Stephen, Miles de Cogan, and Philip de Bruse go to Limerick. Philip ought to attack Limerick, but funks it, and retreats: he has such a set of scamps in his force.

Whand thys was I-dond, thay wentten wyth Phelype to lymeryke.
 Robert hadde wyth hym xxx^{ti} knyghtes & lx^{ti} sweynes; Myles, xx^{ti} 4
 knyghtes & fyfty squyers; Phelype, xx^{ti} knyghtes & xli^{ti} squyers;
 & fotmen wyth euery of ham ful many: they came to the Cytè,
 & noght was betwend ham bot the watyre of the shy^{nned}; & Robert & Myles baden Phylepe to wend ouer & assaylle the 8
 toun; othyr, yf hym leuer we^r, to re^r hym a castele vpon the
 same watyre afor the toun. Phelepe, theghⁿ he knyght wer
 stalwarth & hardy yn hym selue, natheles, throg^h feble consaylle
 of ham that wyth hym, we^r he chase; & mych leuer hym was, leue 12
 the Contrey, & harmles turne ayeyne to hys ownd, Than amonge
 so many fomend & so fer londes, yn so grete perrylle to abydde;
 & that no wonder^r nas, theghⁿ hym yn thyke vyage mys byfelle,
 that so many lydde^r men, theues, & manslaghtres of the marche 16
 of Wales—& thay to-fore al other—hadde I-chose & I-draw to
 hys felewshyppe. Noght lange ther-aftyr, Meredus, Robertes sone,
 yonge knyght & stalwarth, nat wyth-out myche wepyng & sorow
 of many, deyed yn the Cytè of Corke. That whylle, was I-hold 20
 at Rome the consaylle of latran, that mend so moche speketh of,
 vonder the pope Alyxsandy^r the thyrdde. & was wyth-yn thre
 ye^r, thre eclipses of the sone. ¶ Whand Robert steuenessnd &
 Myles of Cogane, wel fyfe yeyr, al desmone yn good pees haddend 24
 to-gyddy^r I-holde, Myles & hys Othome Rauf, Robertes sond,
 that a lytyll ther-to-fore hadde hys doghte^r I-spoused, wentten
 to the contrey of lysmor, to hold parlement wyth ham of
 Waterford. & as thay satend yn the feldes abydyng aftyr ham, 28
 Mactyr, that theder was wyth ham I-come, & wyth whom thay
 sholdend that nyght¹ be I-herbrowed, vnnwytyngly smot vpon
 ham behynd, & ham both, wyth fyue othe^r knyghtes, the^r slown
 wyth sparthes; & othe^r fewe that wer wyth ham vnneth escaped. 32
 Throg^h that thyng, al the contrey forth the^r-aftyr worth so
 I-storbet, that Demot Maccarthy & al the hegh men of * the
 contray, forth wyth Mactyre, ayeyne har trouth, wyth-drowend ham

¹ MS. myght.

and are
 treacher-
 ously slain,
 by Mac
 Tire.

The Irish
 [* Fol. 24
 a.]
 then rebel.

foure *and* xx^{ti} candredes, as hit wolde falle, euen to dele be-twen
 ham // And a Candrede is as myche to Say as, an hundrid toun- Quid est
candreda.
 londe // Whan this was don, thay wentyn *with* Philip to Lymerike. tanta
terrae
 Robert had wyth hym xxx^{ti} knyghtes and xl. Squyeres ; Miles, xx^{ti} portio,
quanta
centum
 knyghtes, l. Squyeres ; and Philip, xx. knyghtys *and* xl. Squyeres ; *and* villas
continere
solet.
 footmen *with* euery of ham ful many. They came to the Cite, and
 noght was betwen ham but the watyr of the Shynnyn. And Robert
 and Miles badyn Philip wende ouer, and assayle the toun ; Othyr,
 yf hym leuer were, to rere hym a castel vpon the same watyr afor 1-1 pusilla-
nimi tamen
suorum
consilio.
potius
indemnis
ad sua
reverti,
quam in
terra tam
hostili
tamque
remota
fortunae
tentare
pericula
praelegit.
 the toun. Philip, thegh he was knyght bolde and hardy in hym-Selfe,
 natheles, ¹through febil consail of them that wyth hym, were he chose ;
and myche leuer hym was, leue the contrey, *and* harmeles turne reverti,
quam in
terra tam
hostili
tamque
remota
fortunae
tentare
pericula
praelegit.
 agayn to his owyn, Then amonge so many enemys, *and* in so fere
 londys, in So grete Peril to abyde ¹. and that no wondyr nas, thegh
 hym in thylke vyage mys-be-felle, that ² So many wyckyd men, con-
 dicones *and* manequelleres of the marche of Walis (*and* thay to-for
 al othir) hadd y-chose and y-draw to his fellochipp. Not longe
 theraftyr, Meredus, Rober[t]es-sone, yonge * Knyght *and* Bolde, not
with-out mych wepynge *and* Sorrow of many, Dyed in the Cite of [* Fol. 23
b.]
 Corke. That tyme, was holde at Rome ³ the consail of latran, that
 men of mych Spekyth, vndyr the Pope Alysandyr the thyrde. *and* 2 viros
homicidas,
seditiosos
ac flagi-
tiosos.
 was *within* iij^e yere, iij^e Eclipsis of the Sonne ⁴. Whan Robert
 Steuenes-Sone and Miles de Cogan, wel v^e yere al Desmond in good 3 sedit
Romae.
 pees hadden to-gaddyr holde, Miles, *and* his Sone-in-law, Raufe,
 Robert-es Sone, that a lytel thertofo^re to his doghtyr had spousid ; 4 non
generales
tamen, sed
partiales.
 wenten to the contrey of lysmore, to holde Parlement *with* ham of
 watyrforde. and as thay Satyn in the feldys abydyng after ham, Mac-
 tyre, that thedyr *with* hame was come, *and* *with* whome thay sholde
 be that nyght logide, Vnwyttygly Smote vpon ham ; and ham both,
 wyth v. othyr knyghtes, thay Slayn wyth Sparres ; *and* othyr few that
 were *with* ham, vnneth escapid. Throght that thyng, al the contrey
 was in were, So that Dermot Maccarthy and al the hey men of the
 Contrey forth *with* Mactyre, agayne har trouth, *with*drawen al frome
A. D. 1182.
improvisis
a tergo
securium
ictibus sunt
interempti.

A. D. 1182. al from the Englysshemeñ, & turned vpoñ Robert steuenes-sonne,
 Robert that oft hadde harde happes assayed; & neuer eft, tyl Reymond
 Fitz-Stephen is to hym come, and helpe hym for to wyn the londe & worth to
 attackt by Irish herytage; ffor Robert ne myght nat pees haue, as he rather hadde. 4
 rebels. As the northren me[n] loueth fyght, also the southren, falsness;
 (The North they trusteth to streynth, these to sleghtes; thay to staluarth-
 Irish are true, and nessene, these to traysoune. Whan Reymond herd that Robert was
 fight; the South are so narrow byladde yn the toun of Corke, wyth hys fomen al 8
 false, and about beseget, he put hym to shyppe yn the hauen of Watyrford,
 trick.) wyth xx^{ti} knyghtes & squyers, & bowmeñ, wel ccc; leftene the
 Reimund lond al oñ the ryght hond, & wentten about by the see, fort he
 Fitz- come to Cork, to gaddre hele to hys frendes, & vnhele to hys 12
 Gerald sails to Cork to help him. fomen. Aftyр many & selcouth camplynges, many of hañ fomeñ
 They put thay slow, & many out of contray thay dryueñ, & the moste parte
 down the rebellion. & the beste come to pees; & so the grete tempeste of that weddyñ
 hape, yn lytel whyle was I-queynt & I-styled. 16

A. D.
 1182-3.

[CHAPTER L.]

There come
 to Ireland,
 Richard de
 Cogan in
 1182;
 and in
 1183,
 Philip de
 Barry, and
 Giraldus
 Cambren-
 sis, who
 wrote 3
 books on
 Ireland.

Hervey of
 Mount-
 maurice
 turns
 monk.

Nat longe theñ aftyñ, come into Irland Richard
 de Cogan, Miles brother, wyth fair meygne
 from the kynge I-sent; & theñ-aftyñ, yn the begynnyge of Marce,
 come Phylpe de barry, a mañ slegñ & staluarth, wyth moch 20
 folk & fayñ, both for to help Robert & Reymond, & foñ to
 castely hys lond of Olethane, whych Robert hym hadde I-yeue;
 and yn the same flot come Maystyñ Geraud, that phelypees
 brotheñ & Robertes neuue, ful good clerk, & a mañ that al the 24
 conqueste, & þe state, & þe wondres of Irland, & the kyndes of
 pepel from the begynnyge, ful Inly soght & oft greped, & thre
 bokes theñ-of maked wyth grete trauayl, fywe yeñ that he was
 theñ. about that tyme, heruy of Mountnorthy yeldet hym monke 28
 at crystes chyrch yn cantyrbery, to whych he hadde thar-to-
 forne I-yeue hys chyrcches of hys lond be Waterford & Weys-
 ford. Wold god that he hadde I-chaunget hys culuertnesse
 and he dydde hys knyghthode, and trecherye as he dydde hys 32
 clothyng¹.

¹ Qui utinam sicut habitum, sic et animum, sicut militiam sic et malitiam deposuisset.—Gir. Camb. Op. v. 352.

the Englysh-men, and turned vpon Robert Steuenes-Sone, that ofte had harde Aduenturis assayed; and neuer este, til Reymond to hym come *and* helpyd hym forto wyn the londe *and* broght to heritage; For Robert ne myght not pees haue, as he radyr hadd. As the northeryn men lowyth fyght, also the Southeryn, falsnys: ¹ thay trustyth to Streynth, thes to sleghtes; thay to boldnys, thes to traysone ¹ // When Reymonde herd that Robert was So narrow by-ladde in the toun of corke, wyth his Ennemys al about besegid, he Put hym to shipp in the hawyn of watyrword *with* xx. knyghtes and Squyeris *and* bow-men wel CCC, leften the londe al on the ryght hande *and* wentyn aboute by the See, fort he come to corke, to grette gladnys to his frendis, *and* Sorrow to his ennemys. Aftyr many *and* selcouth Camplyngys, many of har ennemys thay haue Slayne, *and* many out of contray thay dryuen; and the meste Parte *and* the beste come to Pees; and So the grete tempeste of that weddyr hapid, in lytil whyle was broght to an ² ende. /

A. D. 1182.
donec Reimundus, in hereditatem patruo Stephanidae succedens, urbis custodiam solus obtinuit, [nec tunc plene] pristinam pacem receperavit.

[CHAPTER L.]

A. D. 1182.

NOT longe ther-aftyr, come Into Irland Richard de Cogan, Miles-is brothyr, *with* fayre maynny frome the kynge y-Sende, and ther-aftyr, in the begynnyng of Marce, come Philip de barry, a man sley and bolde, wyth mych pepill *and* fayre, forto helpe both Robert *and* Reymond, and forto castel his londe of olethane, whych Robert hym hade yeue. And in the same flytte come Maystyr Geraude, that Philippes brodyr and Robert-is Eme, ful good clerke, *and* a man that al the conquest *and* the state and the wondris of Irland, and the kynde of Pepill from the begynnyng, ful Inwardly soght, and thre bokys therof makyd wyth grette traauayll, v. yere that he was ther-about ¹ // About that tyme, Heruey of Montmorthy yeldyd hym monke at crystes church in cantyr-berry, to whych he had therto-forne yeue his churchis of his lond betwen Watyrforde * And Weysforde. Wolde god that he hadd y-chaunged His culuertnesse as he didd his knyghthode, and his trayson as he didd his clothyng //

Capitulum 1.

A. D. 1183.

et alius Stephanidae nepos Philippique frater, tam avunculum quam fratrem plurimum consilio iuans. [*Fol. 24 a.]

¹⁻¹ Illa laudis, haec fraudis cupida; illa Martis, haec artis ope confisa; illa viribus nititur, haec versutiis; illa praeliis, haec proditionibus.—Op. v. 350.

² and, MS.

A. D. 1177.

Hugh de
Laci castles
Leinster
and Meath,and makes
such peace
that men
till their
land.He so
attracts
the Irish,
that he is
suspected
of aiming
to be their
King.

A. D. 1181.

John,
Constable
of Chester,
and
Richard de
Pec arrive.
[* Fol. 42
b.]Many
castles
are built.Meiler
Fitz-Henry
gets Kil-
dare, but
changes it
for Leix.

The while that this was thus in Desmone I-done,
 Hugh de Lassy, as man that queynth was &
 staluarth, both leynester & meth¹ nobely casteled, & yn many
 places ther other faylled to-fōr hym; & fayn was about, to setten 4
 yn hār londes, Thay that wyth streynth & vnryghtly wereñ out
 I-dryue, both englysshe & Iresshe; so that, yn lytyll stond, was
 so good pees that meñ arreden & tylleden hār londes, and the
 lond ynto al wel I-stored wyth corne. he drogh̄ to hym 8
 slegthlych, wyth wyrsshype doynge, & stydfaste forward makynge,
 the heghest of the lond folk; from place to place byled the
 lond wyth castel; & yn lytyll whyll, so good pees made, toke
 of othēr, & auauenced hys owne ryuely, & rych ham maked. 12
 The folk of Irland, wyth frenesse & sleghtes, drogh so, & allyed
 to hym, that men haddeñ grete ortrow vpon hym, that he, ayeyne
 the kyng & hys owne trouth, wold make hym self kyng I-crowned
 of the lond. As thys was, & mych spech yn []² of thys 16
 thyng, comon ynto Irland twey knyghtes from the kyng I-sent,—
 that oon heet Ihon, the conestabel of chestre, & that othēr,
 Rycharð of the pek,—for to receyue the keyng of Irland, & that
 hugh shold wend ouer ynto Englund to the kyng; both hār³ he 20
 ouer went, by comyn red of ham al, thay arreden yn that
 somȳr many castells yn leynester; ffor ār that, Myth * was wel
 castelled, & leynestre bot lytyl. Thār þay rereden a castel to
 Reymond, yn forthred Onolan; Another to Gryffyne hys brother; 24
 the thyrd, yn Omurthy, to Water de rydlesford a kylka; the ferth,
 to Iohn the herford, at Tyllagh yn felmeth, & other many.
 Meyller hadde that tyme kyldār of the erles yifte, & the contrey
 about; bot that me toke of hym for .oo coste, & yaf hym þe 28
 contray of leys as yn chaunge. for hyt was smert lond, woddy,
 & of Marche, & ferr, me sette hym thār as man of marche,
 that I-nowe couth theron.

¹ MS. moch.² Space left for a word. A later hand has written something which is illegible. The Latin has only 'fama': see opp. and Gir. Camb. *Op.* v. 355.³ but ere : Sed antequam.

[CHAPTER LI.]

The Whyle that this was thus *dōne* in desmond, *Capitulum l^m.*
 Hugh de Lacy, as man that sly was *and bolde*, *Hugo vero de Laci, summa sollicitudine, victos ab aliis, et violenter a finibus ejectos, ad pacem revocans, eisdem olim deserta tam armentis pasqua, quam ruricolis rura restituit.*
 both leynyster and myth nobely he castelid, and in many Places
 ther othyr falid to-for hym; *and fayne* was aboute to Settyn in har
 londes, Thay that wyth Streynth *and vnryght* / were out-drywe,
 both Englysh and Irysh, So that, in lytel whyle, was So good Pees
 that men Erredyn *and tilledyn* har landys, *and the lond* Into al
 wel Storid *with corne*. he drew to hym Slyly, *with wyrchipp*
 doynge and Stidfast forward makynge, the heghest of the lond-
 Pepyll; *and frome Place to Place* byled the lound *with castelis*;
 and in lytyll Whyle, so good Pees made, toke of othyr, *and*
 auauuced his owyn ryuely, *and ryche ham* made. The Pepill of
 Irland, wyth frenes *and sleghtes*, drow So, *and allied* to hym, that
 men haddyn grete exstymacion vpon hym, that he, agayn the kyng
 and his owyn trouth, wolde make hym-Selfe kyng y-crowned of the
 londe. As this was, *and mych Spech* in taale of thys thyng, comen
 Into Irland, two knyghtes from the kyng y-sende: that oone was
 callid Ihōn, the Constabill Of cestre, and that othyr, Richarde of the
 Peke, forto rescew the keypyng of Irland; and that hugh Sholde
 wend ouer Into Englande, to the kyng. but ar he ouer wente, by
 comyn assente of ham all, thay arreredyn in that Somer many
 castelys in leynyster; For ar that, Mythe was well castelid, and
 leynyster but lytell. Thar thay reredyn a castell to Reymond¹ in
 fothred o nolan¹; Another to gryffyn his brodyr; the thyrde in²
 Omurthy, to water de redelesford at kylka; the iiije. to Ihōn the
 herford, at Tillagh in felmeth, *and othyr many*. Meylere hadd that
 tyme kyldare of the Erlis yfte, and the contrey about; but that thay
 toke of hym for oo Purpos, *and yau* hym the contray of leys in
 change. for hit was wille londe *and woddy*, *and of Marche*, *and*
 ferre, thay sette hym there as man of Marche, þat y-now kouth
 therōn.

*et prae-
notatae
suspicionis
fama cre-
brescente.*

[¹ The
O'Nolan's
barony of
Fothurtu,
now Forth,
in Carlow.]
*ex parte
regis, tan-
quam in
excambium
contu-
lerunt.*

² MS to. Lat.: tertium in Omurethi, Gualtero de Ridenesfordia, apud Tristerdermoth; quartum Johanni de Clahulla super aquam Beruae, non procul a Lechlinia: quintum Johanni Herefordensi apud Collacht.—Op. v. 355.

[CHAPTER LII.]

A. D.
1181-2.

Hugh de Lacyissent back to rule Ireland; and John of Salisbury with him. He builds Castles.

When this was I-don, in the somyr Hugh wente owr in-to Engelande. Ayeyne the wyntte^r the kynge toke of hym sykernesse, & sent hym sone ayeyne kepe^r of Irland, as he rather was sette; wyth hym a clerk, Robert of 4 slepsbery¹, that shold hym be an help & consaylle, & wytnes of hys deddes. At thys comyng, hugh arered manye castells: On to Meylle^r at tachmecho, & thaⁿ he yaue hym hys nece to wyue; another tha^r negh, yn Oboy, to Robert de Byga³; & 8 other^e many, both yn leynestre & yn Myth, that longe hyt wa^r to namy al by name.

[CHAPTER LIII.]

Nota de lupo con-
fitente.A priest
is askt to
shrive a
sick
woman.He finds
a sick
wolf,who talks
to him:he shrives
her.Forthesims
of the
Irish, God
turnd her
into a
wolf.

About that tyme, befel a wonder aduentur yn a wodde of Myth, of a preste that yede by weyes; 12 & as he come throg^h that wodde, come a maⁿ ayeyns hym, & badde hym, for goddys loue, that he shold wend wyth hym for to shryue hys wyf, that lay seke per negh. The preste turned wyth hym; & whaⁿ he come somdel negh, he herd gronyng 16 and wonyng, as thegh^h hyt we^r of a womaⁿ; & whaⁿ he come ryght to, thaⁿ was hyt a wolf that lay ther & groned. Þe preste that saw, & was wel sore aferd, & turned hym awayward: the maⁿ and the wolf both spake to hym, & bad hym that he ne 20 shold nat be adredde, & that he shold turne to shryue hy^r. The preste than toke herth to hym, & blessyt hym, & yede sytte besyde hy^r: & the wolf spake to hym, & shroue to þe preste. & whaⁿ thay hadde þat I-don, þe preste bethoght hym, and thoght that 24 thyng that was forshape, & hade gras to spek, that hyt myght also wel haue grace & ynsyght of other thyng. he sette to, & asked of the out-comen^d men that ynto the lond we^r comen, howe hyt shold be of ham. The wolf answard & seyde, that 'for the syⁿ 28 of þe lond-folke, almyghty gode tok wreche of ham, & sent that folk for to bryng ham yn thraldome; & so thay shold be tyl the same folk wa^r efte encombret whyth² syⁿ; & than thay shold haue power for to done ham the same wrech, fo^r ha^r 32 synnes.'

¹ I. e. salopsbery, Salisbury.² MS. whych.

[CHAPTER LII.]

WHan this was done, In the Somer Hugh went Capitulum
lij^m.
ouer Into England. agayn the Wyntyre, the A. D.
1181-2.
kyng toke of hym Surte, and sende hym Sone agayn keper of
Ireland, as he to-for was. Sende with hym a clerke, Robert of Roberto . . .
Salopes-
buriensi
Slepsbery, that to hym sholde be helpe and consayl, and wytnes of
his dedis. At this comynge, Hugh lette make many castelis. On
to Meyler at tachmeho, and than he yaue hym his deth to rescue [!] cui et
neptem
suam tunc
dedit
uxorem.
Another thar ney, in Oboy, to Robert de Bigaz; and Othyr many,
both in leynystere and in Myth, that longe hit were to reherse ham
al by name.

[CHAPTER LIII.]

ABOUT that tyme, befel a merwelos aduenture in Capitulum
lij^m.
a wodd of Myth, of a Preste that went by weyes. Nota de
lupo con-
fite.
And as he came throw that wodd, came a man agaynes hym¹, and
Prayed hym for the lowe of god, that * He sholde go wyth Hym [*Fol. 24
b.]
forto shrywe Hys wyfe, that Lay seke ther-By. The prest turned [See Gir.
Camb.'s
Topo-
graphia,
ch. 19, Op.
v. 101: it
gives the
story, with
different
details.]
wyth hym; and whan he came Somdel ney, he herde gronyng
and con-Playnyng, as hit were of a woman; and whan he came
there wher she lay, than was hit a wolfe, that lay there and
gronyd. the prest that Saw, and was sore aferde, and turnyd hym
to goo / the man and the wolfe both spake wyth hym, and bade
hym that he sholde not be afferde, and that he sholde turne to
shryw hyre. The Prest toke herte to hym, and blessid hym, and
wente and sattu be-syde hyre. And the Wolfe spake to hym, and
confeste hyr to the preste. and whan thay hadd that done, the preste
bethoght hym, and thoght that thyng that was in myse-lyckenys,
And hadd grace to speke, that hit mygh[t] also wel haue grace and
Insyght in othyr thyng. He enquerid of the strangeres that were
come Into londe, how hit sholde be of ham? The wolfe answerid
and sayde, that 'for the synne of the londe-pepil, almyghty god was ² Sin
autem,
quia pro-
clivis est
cursus ad
voluptates,
et imita-
trix natura
vitiatorum,
ad nostros
ex convictu
mores forte
descen-
derint,
divinam in
se quoque
procul-
dubio
vindictam
provoca-
bunt.
displeysd wyth ham, and sende that Pepill to bryng ham in
thraldome; and So thay sholde be, thil the Same Pepill were aftyr
encombrid wyth Synne². And then thay sholde haue Power to do
to ham the Same Wrechydnys, for har Synnes.'

¹ ecce lupus ad eos accedens. Gir. Camb. Op. v. 101.

[CHAPTER LIV.]

A. D.
1180-6.
Henry II's
sons again
rebel.

Nat longe ther-aftyꝛ, þe yonge kynges henry, the old kynges henryes sone, & his brotheꝛ Geffrey, the Erl of bretaynge, wyth-out many hegh men of thys half þe see, and yen half that ham weren an help & consaylle, the thyꝛde tyme 4
ayeyne hys fader begaṅ to aryse; bot sone ther-aftyꝛ, as thegh hyt weꝛ through wrech of god, thay bothe deyeden, the on about mydsomyꝛ at Marcelle—& þat was the yonge kynges,—& þe erl sone ther-aftyꝛ deyed eke at parys: and thys þe kynges weꝛ 8
ayeynes his¹ sones was y-endet.

Prince
Henry
dies,
11 June
1183;
Geoffrey
dies
19 Aug.
1186.

[CHAPTER LV.]

St. Laur-
ence,
Archbp. of
Dublin,

Wnder this, laurence, Erchebisshope of Dyuelyne, (that at the consaylle of the latran hadde I-be, & as me seyde, ther he hadde purchased ayenys the 12
kynges for loue of hys lond-folke, whar-of the kynges hadde grete ortrow vp-on hym, wheꝛ-foꝛ he lete hym of hys passage ynto Irland,) the xvij kalends of december, deyed at Oye yn nor-mandy; a good mane and holy; & þat, gode almyghty sheweth, 16
by many myrales þat he openly doth for hyṅ. Me *rede eke of hym, that he was seke thre dayes ar he thader come; and whan he sawe ouꝛ lady-chyrch, that ys the modyꝛ-chyrch of the toun, he seyde thys vers of the psauter, as prophecy, through 20
þe holy goste: 'Hec Requies mea in seculum seculi' et cetera: & ys thus mych to sygge an-englysshe, 'Thys ys my reste, world wyth-out end; her I wyll wonne, for I hyt haue I-chose.'

dies at Eu
14 Nov.
1180,
[*Fol. 25
a.]

after
having
prophesied
his death
there.

John
Comin is
next Arch-
bishop,
A. D. 1181.
He is con-
secrated at
Velletri,
A. D. 1182.

¶ Aftyꝛ hym, was Erchebysshop of dyuelyne, Ihon comyn, a 24
maṅ of England borne; & yn England, at euesham, of the clergie of dyuelyṅ (by queyntyse and procurment of the kynges), by on accorde I-chose; & of the pope lucye, at the Cyte of Wellet, theꝛ-aftyꝛ I-hodet & I-sacred; a man, good clerke & ryghtful; & by 28
hys myght, mych ryght laked þe stat of holy chyrch yn Irland.

[CHAPTER LVI.]

Henry II
gives
Ireland to
his son
John.

The kynges henry, as he there-to-fore hadde I-thoght, yaue the Lond of Irland to hys yongeste sone, Iohn by name; & whaṅ he hyt hadde hym I-yeue, 32

¹ overlined later.

[CHAPTER LIV.]

Not longe ther-aftyr, the yonge kyng henry, the olde kyng henryes Sone, and his brodyr Geffery, the Erle of brytayne, *with* othyr many hey men of this halfe the see, and yen half that ham weryn an helpe and consayl, the thyrd tyme agayn his fadyr be-gan to arryse; but Sone ther-aftyr, as hit were through Sentence of god, thay both died, the one aboute Midsomyre at Marcelle, and that was the yonge kyng; and the Erle Sone ther-aftyr diede also at Paris: and thus the kynges werre agaynes his Sonnes was Endyd.

Capitulum
liij^m.

A. D.
1180-6.

*prae-
potentes
Pictaviae
proceres,
cum electa
Gallicae
militiae
juventute.*

[CHAPTER LV.]

Vndyr this laurance, Archebischope of Deuelyn, (that at the consail of the Latran hadd I-be, and as thay Sayde, ther he had Purchasid agaynes the kyng for loue of his londe-Pepill, wharof the kyng had grette artrow vpon hym, Wherfor he lette hym of his passage in-to Irland,) the xvij kalends of Decembyr died at Oye in Normandy, a good man and holy, and that god almyghty Shewid many Miraclis for / that he opynly doth for hym. We rede also of hym, that he was seke iij^e dayes ar he thadyr came; and whan he Saw our Ladyes churche, that is the modyr churche of the toun, he sayde this vers of the Sawter, as prophesy throw the holy goste: "Hec requies mea in *seculum seculi*: Hic habitabo¹, quoniam elegi eam." And is thus mych to Say in Englysh, "This is my reste, worlde wythout Ende. Her y wyl dwele, for y hit haue chose" // Aftyr hym, was Archebischope of Deuelyn, Ihon Comyn, a man of England borne; and in England, at euesham, of the clergi of deuelyn (by queyntyse and procurment of the kyng), by oone acorde chose; and of the Pope Lucie, at the Cite of wellet, ther-aftyr y-hodet and y-Sacrid; a man, god clerke, and ryghtful, and by his myght / mych ryght lakyd the state of holy churche In Irland².

Capitulum
lv^m.

14 Nov.
1180.

A. D. 1181.

² *ecclesiae
Hibernicae
statum
egregie
subli-
masset.*

[CHAPTER LVI.]

The kyng Henry, as he there-tofor hadd thoght, yaue the londe of Irland to his yongest Sone, Ihon by Name. And whan he hit hadde hym yeue, he Sende the Arche-

Capitulum
lvj^m.

[Fol. 25
a.]

¹ habitobo, MS.

A. D. 1184. he sent þe Erchebysshope of dyuelyn ouer þe see, to ordeyn ayeyne Archbp. Comin is sent to Ireland; Hugh de Lacy is recald, and Philip of Worcester takes his place. He took tallage of all, and curses with it. hys sones comynge. & sone aftyr þat, hugh de lassy was I-sent aftyr ynto Englund; and come ynto Irland, Phelype of Wyrcestre, procurato[ur] of þe lond, wyth fourty knyghtes; a man that was 4 good knyght, curteys, & good mete-yeuer; bot oþer good ne dydde he noon, saue þat he went from contray to contray, & asked, & wyth streynth toke, both of leired & of lewed, þe cursed tallages of gold & of syluer. & I wnderstond that he neuer good 8 dydde þerwyth; ne neuer mane shalle, that so catell gadereth; for many crystes curs, & trew mannys & womannes, pouer & ryche, thay gadereth eke þer-wyth: & wel vnsyker may mañ be, to do hys lyf yn aduentur wyth ham that catel so wynnethe. 12

[CHAPTER LVII.]

The fyrst comynge of kyngge John ynto Irland. He lands at Waterford 25 April, 1185. Those who conquer the land before him deserve all praise. Nota the kyng his tytyle to Irland. Fitz-Stephen and Striguil had good right to come to Ireland. **W**han the kynges sone hadde arayed al dynge that nede was, for to come yn-to Irland, he put hym to saylle at Melyford, a ferth estre day. he hadde good wynd, & a-morow arryued at Waterford, wyth thre hun- 16 dret knyghtys, & other an-hors, & a-fote ful many. he arryued, the yeer of hys old .xxij.; of hys faderes comynge ynto Irland .xiiij.; of the Erles comynge .xiiij.; of Robertes comynge, fytz-steuen .xv.; the yeer of owr lordes Incarnacion .M. C. lxxxv. 20 Steuenes-sone was forman, & opened the wey to þe Erl; the Erl to þe kyngge; the kyngge to hys sone; & mych hyt ys to preyse, & grete thyngge he began, that fyrste ynto Irland so boldly come, the thyngge to begyn. Moch also to preysene, he, that 24 aftyr the begynnynge, so nobely come for to eche thyngge that was begon; & most of al to preysen, he that al thyngge fulle endet, & the lordshype clenlych wan ouer al other [Hy. II]. Her, men mowen well vndrestond, that the Englessy-men ne came nat 28 wyth so mych vnryght yn-to Irland as many folk weneth; for Robert, steuenes-sone, & þe Erl, wyth good ryght come to Macmorgñ ynto leynester; the on, hys trouth for to hold, & hym for to helpe; that other, for loue of hys doghtre; nathles, of 32 Waterford, ne of Myth, ne of Desmon, whych the Erl at the begynnynge name to hym, & conquered out of leynestre, ne sey I noght that he hadde al fully ryght ther-to. Bot of the fyft

bischope of Deuelyn ouer the see, to ordeyn agayn his comynge. A. D. 1184. And Sone aftyr that, hugh de Lacy was Sende¹ into England; And come Into Irland, Philipp of Wircestre, procuratour of the londe, with fourty knyghtes; a man that was good knyght / curteys, and goode mete-yeuer; but othyr good ne did he noone; Saue that he went from contray to contray, and askyd, and wyth streynth toke, both of lerid and lewid, the cursid tollagis of golde and Syluer. And I vnderstonde that he neuer good did ther-with; ne neuer man shall, that So good gadderid; for many crystis curs, and trew manys and womannys, Pouer and rych, thay gadderid also ther-wyth: and wel vnsure may a man to be, to do his lyfe in aduenture wyth them that So goode doth gette.

[Philip, in his expedition to Armagh,] a clero sacro auri tributum execrabile tam erigens quam extorquens. —Op. v. 360.

[CHAPTER LVII.]

When the kynges Sone hadd arrayed al thyng that nede was forto come Into Irland, he Putt hym to Sayl at Milleford the iiij^e day aftyr Estyr. He had good wynde, and amorrow londid at Watyrforde, wyth CCC knyghtes, and othyr an-hors and a-foote ful many. he londyd, the yere of his age xxij, Of his faderis comynge Into Irlande xiiij, Of the Erlis comynge xiiij, of Roberes comynge fitz Steuyñ xv, the yere of Oure lordys Incarnacioñ M^r. Clxxxv. Steuenes Sone was the fryst man, And oppenyd the way to the Erle: the Erle to the kyng; the kyng to his Sone; and gretly he is to Preyse, and grete thyng he began, that fryst in-to Irland So boldely come, the thyng to begyn; gretly also he is to Preyse, that, aftyr the begynnyng, so nobely come forto execute the thyng that was begon; And moste of al he is to Preyse, that al thyng full Endyd, and the lorchip clenly conquesyd ouer al othyr // Here men mowen wel vnderstond, that the Englysh-men came not wyth so mych vnryght into Irland as many pepill wenyth. For Robert Steuenes-Sone and the Erle come to Macmurgħ into leynystre; that oon, on his throuth forto holde, and hym forto helpe, / that othyr, for loue of his doghtyr. Natheles, of Watyrford, ne of Mythe, nethyr of Desmon, wych the Erle at the begynnyng toke to hym and conquerid out of leynystre, I Sey not that he hadd ful ryght therto. But of the fryst Parte of the londe

Capitulum lvij^m.

The fryst comyng of kyng Ihon Into Irlande.

[Op. v. 382]

Multum ergo contulit qui ausu nobili principium dedit.

Nota the kyngys titil to Irlande.

² quintae portioñis insulae.

¹ Sende aftyr, MS.

Henry II's parte of the lond that was the Erles throg̃h hys wyf, The fivefold lordshype clenly þe erl yaf the kyng; & al þe prynces of the right to Ireland: lond ther-aftyr, by har good wyll, yolded̃ ham to the kyng, to be euermõ sugget to hym & to hys. Vp*-on al thys, þe pope of 4
 1. All the Irish Princes yielded to him. Rome, that ys heede of al crystendome, and that hath a specyall ryght of al the Ilondes of crystendome as wyde as the world ys, he yaf plenerly, and confermed to the kyng, the lordshyp of the lond, as hyt ys to-fore I-told. and of eldre ryght we 8
 [*Fol. 25 b.] fyndeth eke I-wrytte, that the kynges of England haue to Irland of Germond, Belynes sone, kyng of Brytaygne, that ys nowe Englund, he come ynto Irland, & whan the lond; & many yẽ me bar̃ hym truage, and othẽr aftyr̃ hym, ynto brytaygne. 12
 2. The Pope of Rome granted Ireland to him. Ther-aftyr̃ the kyng Arthũr hadde truage eke out of Irland; & Gylmory the kyng, that thãnd was wyth other kyng of the 16
 3. Gurguntius won Irland. Ilondes, was wyth̃ hym at the grete feste that he held at karlyõnd. Oñ other halue, the folk of Irland come formeste out of bastles 16
 4. Arthur had truage from Irland. & out of Bayõnd, that longeth now to gascoyne, wherof the kynges of england ben lordes. And thys me may wel vnderstond, that 20
 5. The Irish came from Bayonne, subject to England. English kings are, of right, Lords of Irland. to haue the lordshyp of Irland. And theg̃h the folk of the lond 20
 neuer ne hadde be subyet ther-byfore, hyt oght be I-noght, þat thay al by good wylle yold ham to kyng henry, by othes & by ostages, & al sykernesse that hymself lyked; & þe popes that per-aftyr̃ hym graunted & confermed the lordshyp of the lond, 24
 Nota that Iresshemene bene false of kynd. & accorsed al ham that ỹnd any tyme thar-ayeyn come. And theg̃h thay, throg̃h kynd falsnesse & vnstablesse that yn ham ys, lytyl tel of othes & of mansynge, natheles, thay wer neuer, throg̃h no man that power hadde, thẽr-of assoylled ne vnbound. 28
 Bot man may bynd hymself wyth̃ such thyng, bot nat so lyghly vnbynd.

[CHAPTER LVIII.]

Giraldus says no more of the Conquest, but explains why it was never completed. **M**aystir̃ Geraud ne telleth no forther of the conquest; bot of þe lette where-throg̃h the lond 32
 was [not] clenlych I-conquered, ne the folk fully I-broght yn thedone, he telleth such resons:—Thay that fyrst comẽd, haddẽd̃ ful wel I-spedde wyth̃-out any lette, yif þe kyng ne hadd so astyly

that was the Erlis by hys wyfe, The lorchipp clenly the Erle yaue to the kyng; and al the Prynceys of the londe ther-aftyr, by har good-will, yoldyn ham to the kyng to be euer-more subiecte to hym and to hys. Vpon al this, the pope of Rome, that is hede of al crystyndome, *and* that hath a Special ryght of al the Ilondys of *qui insulas omnes sibi speciuli quodam jure respiciunt.* crystyndome, as wid as the worlde is, he yaue Plenerly, *and* confermyd to the kyng, the lorchipp of the lond, as hit is to-fore tolde. And of eldyre ryght we fyndyth also y-writte, that the kyng of Englande haue to Irlande * of Gormon, Belynes Sone, Kyng of Brytaigne¹, that is now England, he come Into Irland, and toke the londe; *and* many a yere thay bare hym truage, *and* othyr aftyr hym, Into brytaigne. Ther-aftyr also, kyng Artoure hadd truage out of Irland²; and Gylmory the kyng, that that tyme was wyth othyr kynges of the Ilandis, was *with* hym at the grete feste that he helde at karliōn. On othyr halue, the Pepil of Irlande come fryste out of Bascles *and* out of Bayon, that longyth now to gascoyne, Wherof the kynges of Englande ben lordys. And thus ye may wel vnderstonde that, both by olde ryght and by new, the kynges of England owen well to haue the lorchipp of Irland. And thegh the folke of the londe neuer hadd be Subiecte ther-by-fore, hit oght be y-now, that thay al, by good-will, yaue ham to the kyng henry by othys and hostages, *and* by al maner Surte that he desyrid³; and the Popis that ther-aftyr hym graunted *and* confermyd the lorchipp of the londe, and acorsyd al them that in any tyme ther-agayn come. ¶ And thegh thay, by kynde falsnes and vnstabilnes that in ham is, lytel tell of othys *and* of mansynge, natheles, thay were neuer, by noo man that Power hadd, therof assoilled ne vnbound. But a man may bynde hym-Selfe *with* Such thyng, but nocht So lyght vn-bynde.

[CHAPTER LVIII.]

Maister geraud ne tellyth no ferdyr the conquest; but of the lette wherfor the londe was [not] clenlych I-conquerid, ne the Pepil fully y-brought in theudom, he tellyth Such resonys:—Thay that fryst comen, haddyn full well y-Spede

Capitulum
lviiij^m.

¹ Brytayne, MS.

³ firmis fidei sacramentique vinculis: v. 320.

1. Henry I's stopping the coming of the English. I-sent, & forboden that no man ne shold to ham come; & thay that wer̄ ynto þe lond I-come, shold the lond leue, & turne ayeine, othēr forlese al that thay helden of the kyng yn othēr londes. And whān the kyng was ynto the lond 4
 2. His going home so soon after his Invasion of Ireland. hymself I-come *wyth* so moch power, hyt had he wel ynoght, nār that he hadd so sone turned ayeine, through the popes heste & þe cardynals, & eke the lyddernesse that hys sones hadden I-purueyed to do hym, the whyll that he was out of lond. ffor 8
 The Irish, at first frightned, learnt to fight and shoot, swyth amayed, & aferd & agrysed of the wepned men stalwarthnesse, and of the derne wondynge of arwes, through lange abydyng & sleuyth of Maystres that no stalwarthnesse ne sykernesse was 12
 and often beat the English. happes yn fyght vpōn englysshe-mēn; & on thys maner, that at the begynnynge lyghly myght be I-shent & I-brought vnder fote, 16
 War comes on folk only for their sins. The Irish sind, but God gave me shal neuer fynd that wer̄ & hate came vpōn folk, bot for 20
 [*Fol. 28 a.] hār synnes; & so hyt may wel be of the folk of Irland, that oft serued wel, for hār synnes, to haue werre & wrak of othēr outlondes men; natheles, god almyghty was nat ham so wengeable wrot, that he tholled ham fully, nether al to be vndone, ne fully 24
 no one grace to enslave them. The four chief Irish Prophets say that the I-brought yn-to theudome, nether * thay clenly forelore *grace*; ne the other clenlych hadden *grace*, the Maystrye to hawe, ham fully & preysebly yn theudome for to hold. Me fynt that þe Iresshemmen haddēn four prophetes, euery yn hys tyme, Patryk, Molyng, 28
 English shan't fully conquer Ireland till Doomsday; Braken, & Colmkyll, whos bokes ben wyth ham an Iresshe I-wrytte; euery of ham speken̄ of the fyght of thys conqueste, & seyne that 'lange stryf & oft fyghtynge shal be for thys lond; & oft the lond shal be I-horyed & I-steyned *wyth* grete slaight of 32
 men.' Bot vnnethe thay beheteth the Englyssh peple fully þe maystrye a lytell ār domesday, & that the lond shal from see to see be I-castelled & fully I-won. Bot the englysshe-mēn shollen̄, ar that, oft wel feble be, & myche desayse yn the lond so [? se]. Barcān 36

with-out any lette, yf the kyng ne hadd So hastely y-sende *and* *si non primis praeursorum adventibus regio fuisse edicto praecisa sequela.* comandid that no man ne sholde to ham come; and thay that were Into the londe y-come, sholde the londe lewe, *and* turne ayeyn, othyr to lese al that thay heldyn of the kyng in othyr londys. And whan the kyng was Into the land hym-Selfe y-come with So mych Power, hit hadd y-be wel y-now, ¹ nar that he hadd So Sone turned agayn, through the Popis comandment and the cardynalis, ¹ *si ab ausu nobilitate praemature intestina conspiratio non revocasset.* And also the wickydays that his Sones haddyn y-Purueyed to done hym, the whyle that he was out of londe. For the Pepil that, at the begynnyng of So Sodeyn comyng, was So gretly aferde *and* agrisid the wepynyd-men boldenys, *and* of the cruel woundyng of arowes, throw longe abydyng and Sleuth of Maysters, that no boldnys ne Sickyrnys was wyth, by lytell and lytell lernyd wepynd to berre, Arrowes to shote; *and* So wel vsyd ham therto, that many tymys ham by-fell wondyrly good happys in fyght vpon englysh-men; and on this manere, that at the begynnyng lygh[t]ly myght be shente *and* broght vnderfoote, Weryn bolde and hardy to Wythstonde *and* defende ham-Selfe / We may rede and ouerseche the boke of kynges, the prophetis, al the olde rede fro ende to oper, *and* othyr tymys that to-for haue y-be, We shal neuer fynde that were ne hate came vpon Pepill, but for har Synnes. And So hit may wel be of the Pepil of Irland, that ofte serued wel, for har Synnes, to haue werre * *and* wrake of othyr strange comen men. Natheles, god almyghty was not ham so wengeabil wroth that he wolde fully ham Putte out of londe, nethyre al to be vndone, ne fully broght Into traldome, nethyr thay clenly forlorne grace. Nethyr ne othyr hadd not fully grace, the Maystry to haue, *and* ham fully *and* Pesabilly in thraldome to holde / ¶ We fyndyth that the Irysh-men haddyn iij^e prophetis euery in his tyme, Patrike, Molyng, Brakan and Colmkylle, Whos bokis ben wyth ham in Irysh writte. Euery of ham Spekyth of the fyght of this conqueste, And Sayne that ‘lange stryfe *and* of fyghtyng shall be for this londe; *and* ofte the lond shall be defowlid *and* y-steynyng wyth grete Slaght of men.’ But vnnethe thay grauntyth that the Englysh pepil fully the maystry, a lytel ar the day of Dome, *and* that the lond shall from See to See / be castelid *and* fully Enhabited ² / But p^e Englysh-men shall, ar that, ofte wel febil be, *and* mych

*confundi poterat.**totam . . Veteris Testamenti seriem.*

[*Fol. 26 a.]

*vel omnino subijci meruit vel deleri.**Nota de prophetis Hibernie.*² *ex toto subacta et incastellata.*

but they shall be troubled by a King from St. Patrick's Mountains.

seyth, that 'through a kyng that shal come out of the wyl montayngnes of seynt patrykes þat me cleppeth slesco (?), & on a soneday-nyght¹, a castel yn the wodd contreys of Offalye shal to-brek, most what al the Englysshe-men of Irland shullen⁴ be I-stourbet' //

[CHAPTER LIX.]

I'll tell you why Prince John didn't succeed in Ireland.

Now and for whych thyng hit was, that the kynges sonnes trauaille, and har mochel costes, at thys tyme ne sped nat as tham ogh, hyt ys noñ harme⁸ thegh me heṛ sette; for thegh of thyng that ys I-past ne be no

When he landed, rich men welcomd him, but had their beards pulld by his young Normans.

remedy, natheles, of thyng that ys to come, me may be waṛ by ensample of haṛ dede. Whan the kynges sone was Icome to lond at Waterford, thedeṛ come to hym Iresshe-meñ of the¹² contray, rych meñ, and of pees trew hym besoght, & made hym grete gladnesshe as hare lord, & profred hym to kysseñ. Thay anoon ryght of tho new meñ, & namely of the Normannes, wereñ shame-fully receyued, & lothly I-hokred, & by the berdes—whych,¹⁶

The Irish went off disgusted, and told their countrymen.

yn the maner of the contrey, they hadden grete & long—some of ham shamly wereñ I-shakeñ & I-draw. As sone as thay comen to haṛ owne, wyth al that thay hadden thay wyth-drowen ham, & left the contrey & wenten to the kyng of Thomoñ, and hym [told], &²⁰ also the kyng of desmoñ & the kyng of Connaght, what thay hadd receyued & found wyth the kynges sone. ¶ A yonglyng al wyth yonglynges gouerned; & by yonge meñ rede, al he wrought; no wytte ne no staluarthnesse wyth hym was found; no sekernese ne²⁴

The three chiefs of Ireland (of Limerick, Connaught, and Cork,)

prouth to Iresshemeñ, thayr south nat behete. Whañ tythynges heṛ-of was I-spronge, thay thre cheftayns of Irland that weṛ theṛ redy to come to the kynges sone, & ham to hym, & do hym homage, thay thoghtten that, aftyṛ thay smal harmes, woldeñ come more; &²⁸ whañ me such thyng dydde to good meñ & meke, wel wors

sware they'd fight for their freedom to the death.

me wold do the prouth & the vnbuxum. Thay toke ham to rede, & sworṛ to-gedder that thay woldeñ vpon haṛ lyues wythstond the ryghtes of haṛ old fredomes, & defende, for to be al to-heweñ.³² And for that thay shold² th[is] th[ing] the better to end brynge, thay

¹ MS. sone myght.

² From this line to the end of the page, the ends of the lines are missing, the corner of the page being torn off.

myssayse haue in the londe. So Brakan Seyth, that 'throug^h a kynge that shal come of the wylde Montaignes of Seynte Patrickes, that is callid Selfco, and on a soneday-nyght², a castel in the wode contreies of Ofelanye shal breke, most what al the Englysh-men of Irland shal be strobyd.'

Slesto,
alias
Ofaley.

[CHAPTER LIX.]

NOW and for wyche thyng^e hit was, that the kynges Sones travayll, and his grete costes, at this tyme sped noght as tham oght, Hit is none harme thegh I her reherse. Forto speke of thyng^e that is Paste, is no remedy; Nevyrthelasse, of thyng^e that is to come, we may be-ware by ensampil of har dedes //

¶ Whan the kynges Sone was come to londe at Watyrforde, thedyr come to hym Irysh-men of the contray, rych men³, and of trew Pees hym be-soght / and made hym grete gladnys as har lorde, and proferid to kysse hym. Than anoone ryght / of two new men,⁴ and namely of the Normanes, waryn shamefully resewid; and lewidly Pullid^r ham by the Berdys, whych, in the maner of the contrey, thay haddyū grete and longe. Some of them wer Shamefully shaken and ydrawen. As Sone as thay comen to har owyn, wyth all that thay hadde, thay wythdrawen ham and lefte the contrey, and wente to the kynge of Thomonde, and tolde hym, and also the kynge of Desmonde and the kynge of Connaght, what thay hadd resewyd and found with the kynges sone. ¶ A yonglyng^e al wyth yonglynges gouernyd; and by yonge men consayl al didd; And no witte ne boldnys wyth hym was founde; ne Surte, ne trouth, to yrysh-men thay couth not promyse⁵. ¶ Whan tythyngys herof was spronge, thay iij⁶ captaynys of Irland⁶ that was that tyme redy to come to the kynges sone, and yelde ham to hym, and to do hym homage, thay thoghten, that aftyr thay smale harmys, wolde come more; and whan thay Such thyng^e did to good mēn and meke, Wel wors thay wolde do to the Prute and the vnboxum. Thay toke hame to *consail, and Sware to-gadderes that thay woldyn vpon Har Lywes wythstond the ryghtes of har olde fredomys, and defende til thay were al hewyde. And for thay sholde this thyng^e the bettyr brynge to

Capitulum
lix^m.

³ *virī non infirmi, fideles*

hactenus Anglis, et pacifici,

tanquam domino congratulantes,

et eum in osculo

pacis suscipientes.

⁴ *a novis nostris et Normannis.*

⁵ *nullam Hibernicis securitatem promittentes.*

⁶ *tres principales tunc temporis Hiberniae postes, Limericensis, Connacensis, et Corga-giensis.*

Ihesus.

[*Fol. 26 b.]

antiquae libertatis sub capitem discrimine

sub

capitem discrimine

tuentium.

¹ per quemdam regem, de desertis Patricii montibus venturum, et nocte Dominica, castrum quoddam in nemorosis Ophelanie partibus irrupturum, jura omnes fere Anglici ab Hibernia turbabuntur.—*Op.* v. 385.

² MS. sone myght (the same mistake, as before, in both MSS.).

The Irish rebels make friends with their foes. Tho' false themselves, they object to others being false to them. [*Fol. 26 b.] John's failure is explaind by Rehoboam's, whose following of young men's advice, lost him ten Tribes of Israel.

John gave the lands of faithful Irish, to new men.

So these Irish turnd against him.

The coast towns and castles were given to rebels, who only gatherd gold, and did harm to peace-men, not to foes.

sentted about ynto al the lond, & allyed h . . . & maden frendes of ham that weŕ byfore fome[n], & thus throug ham that th . . -nyge putte (progh pryde) from ham, both thaye & al other most dele were þys folke, as euery otheŕ wyld folk, thegh thay no 4 wyrshype ne couthe me shold do ham wyrshype & manshype. And thegh thay nat be wyth falsnesse, natheles thay shonneth that otheŕ do ham [any falskede;] & thus the good that thay loueth yn otheŕ, thay rech. ham 8 to-gydden thay *Euery wysman vnderstond hym by Roboam, Salomones sone, how mych harme falleth of pryde & ouertrowshype. whaīd he, aftyr hys fadyŕ, was made kynge of Israel, þe folk come to hym, & bysoght hym that he shold ham somewhat 12 allegge of þe seruyces that thay weŕ I-woned to do hys fadyŕ. He was yonge; and by yonge meīd consaylle, answard & seyde, 'My fyngyr ys gretter thanīd was my faders ryggebone; & yf he yow bette wyth yardes, y wyl yow bette wyth breres.' ¶ Throug that 16 answaŕ, the ten kynredes hym lefted, & maden ham kynge of Ieroboam, & neuer aftyr weren vnder hym ne noon of hys: of al þe folk of Israel, non wyth hym abode, bot twey kynredes. Vpon thys, þe Iresshe-men londes, that, fro the tyme that Robert steuenes- 20 sone fyrst come ynto þe lond, trewly wyth englysshe-men hadden I-be, weŕ I-take fro ham, & yeuen to the newe meīd. And thay anoōd turned to the Iresshe-men, & aspyed al the harme that thay myght do to þe Englysshe; & werē, so mych the more harme dydde, 24 that thay so pryue werē wyth ham ther-byfore

[CHAPTER LX.]

The tounes vp-on the see, and the castels, wyth the londes that to ham belonget, & the truages & the rentes that shold be I-spende yn comyn nede of the 28 lond, & to ham, of rebelles thay waŕ I-sette to such that wel fayne gadered gold & syluer wyth-yn woves, eten wel & drynked, and ladden Idel lyf, & al thyng vnprofytably wasteded, to harme of pees-meīd, & nat of fomeīd. Amonge otheŕ harmes betydde yit 32 more, that yn lond so smert & so kene, & folk so weyward & so vnredy, & so mych harme doynge, The kepyng & the maystry toke

Ende, thay Sende about into al the londe, and allied ham togaderis, *and* madyn frendys of tham that were enemys. And thus throw ham, that thay at the begynnyng Putte (throw Pryde) from them, both thay and al otheres for the more parte was fro them stirrid.

¶ This Pepyll, as euery othyr wylde Pepill, thegh thay no wyrchipp kowth not, Natheles thay wolde that hy sholde do ham wyrchippe *and* manshipe. And thegh thay be not aferde ne ashamyd to be founde wyth falsnesse, Natheles, thay Shonnyth that any othyr sholde do ham any falshede: and thay lowyth trouth; and thus good that thay lowyth in otheres, thay thynke no fors whow lytill be found in ham-Selfe therof. Euery vysman vndyrstond hym by Roboam, Salomones Sone, how mych harym fallyth of Pryde. Whan he, aftyr his fadyr, was made kynge of Israel, the Pepil come to hym, *and* besoght hym that he sholde ham Somewhate allegge of the Seruyces that thay were wonyd to do to his fadyr. He was yonge; and, by yonge men consayl, answerid and Sayde,

¶ “My fyngyr is more *and* grettyr then was my Fadyris bake-bone; And yf he bette yow wyth yardes, y will bette you *with* breris” /

¶ And for that answe, al the tene kynredes lefte hym / *and* made ham a kynge of Ieroboam; *and* neuer aftyr weryn vndyr hym, ne noone of his. Of al the Pepil of Israel, none *with* hym abode, but two kynredis. Vpon this, the Irysh-men londes that fro the tyme that Robert Steuenes Sone fryste come Into the londe, trewely wyth englysh-men haddyn, wer take fro ham, *and* yewyn to two new men¹. And thay anoone turnyd to the Irysh-men, *and* aspied al the harme that thay myght do to be Englysh; and werre, so mych the more harme didde, that thay were so Pryue wyth ham therto-fore².

[CHAPTER LX.]

The tounes vpon the See, *and* the castelis, wyth the londys that to ham Partenyd, and the truages and the rentes that sholde be I-Spend in the comyn Profite of the londe, *and* yaue hit to Rebellys³, *and* to suche that well fayne gaderid golde and Syluer wyth-In woves, etten wel, and drounken, *and* laddyn ydill lyfe, and al thyng vnprofytably wastyne, to grete harme of Pees men, *and* noght to enemys. Amonge al othyr harmys befell yit more, that in the londe So Smyrte *and* So kene, *and* Pepil So weyward⁴ and So vnredy, *and* So mych harme doynge,

Quia primos a nobis insolenter repulimus... tam illos quam majores universos eo exemplo absterrui-mus bonum quod in aliis diligunt, minus in se reperiri non erubescunt.

ego vos caedam scorpionibus.

¹ *novis nostris,*

contra promissa contulimus.

² *tanto quidem ad nocendum efficaciores, quanto prius fuerant familiariores.*

³ *talibus est assignata, qui aurum Capitulum lx^m.*

assidue intra muros aucupantes... cum civium, non hostium danno cuncta inutiliter consumebant.

The Eng- an hand, that leuer¹ hadde har rych robes, than ham to wepne ;
lish
Governors leuer to sytte at borde, þan hoste to lede ; redyeṛ to fle þan to
were fyght ; leuer to hold a fayṛ mayd by the womb, thaṁ speṛ & sheld
cowards, to beṛ an hand ; netherṛ trewe to haṛ vnderlynges, ne dredful to haṛ 4
and liked
women
better than
war.
enemies. Thay had nat that good herte, ne of ky[nde] yt comṁ to
hamṁ, for to spaṛ the meke, & wreke ham on the prout ; bot al ayeyne
that, thay sp[arid & ²] lykled wyth the sterne, & pulled & strope
ham that noṁ harme dydde. Vnder whych gouernours, the 8
The Irish
now burnt,
slew, and
stole.
Iresshe-meṁ begoṁ to pryde & take ouer-hand of the englysshe,
branten and slown, robbedeṁ And stelledṁ ; for the maystres wyth
The Eng- haṛ meygne, heldenṁ ham alwey yn the cytees vpoṁ the see, þer
lish of the
coast stuck
to wine
and
women.
The inland
was plun-
dered by
the Irish.
plente was of wyṁ & of womenṁ, to whych they weren al clenlych 12
I-yeue to. Bot the lond wyth-In, & the marches next haṛ enemies,
& the castles & the tounes that weren amyṁ, weren I-lefte &
I-brant, the men I-robbed & I-sleyn, wyth-out any lette. The
good knyghtes & the eldre folk of the lond, as meṁ that me 16
noght told-by that whyle, wyth-drow ham al sleghtly, & held ham
al stytle, for to awayty al soft, what endyngge such hyddous stormes
wold ham. That whyle, þe state of the lond was such, In al places
was weylyngge & wonyngge, yollyngge & cryngge ; Al þe weyes forlete ; 20
Every-
where was
wailing ;
every day
fresh news
of fire and
slaughter.
no maṁ ne trust to mete wyth other ; euery day come newe
tythynges of bernyngge & sleynge, robberyngge & reuyng³ yn the out
londes : vneth a lytel shadow of pees was yn þe bourgh tounes, þer
the wyn quenched al þe sorowe ; the gold & the syluer, al oþer 24
harmes ; thaṛ me shold yn so lydder world wend from contray to
contray wyth folk I-wepned, and chasty ham that mysdeden. Thay
setten Iustyces of bench yn haṛ robes of scarlet & menyuer : meṁ
wyth swerdes & battes ham for to kepe, ther no nede was. Than 28
ruind
good men
and true,
[*Fol. 27
a.]
worse than
Irish foes
did.
was þe motyngge, the pledyngge and reynnyngge of good men and
trewe that * non harme dydden : wors ham dydde the harme & the
ten that pay ther-through haddeṁ, þaṁ the robberyngge & reuyngge that
thaṛ enemies ham dydde. ¶ Another thyngge that mych was to 32

¹ MS. *louer*.² Torn out.³ The corner of p. 26 b was torn off before being written upon, so that there are no words missing, and the lines follow each other as usual.

The keypyng¹, and the men that was Maysteres to kepe the lande, he had lewer his rych clothis to were, than wepyn to berre; and lowid bettyr to sitte at borde, than hoste to lede; and more redyer to fle than to fyght; leuer to holde a fayre mayde by the wombe, than spere and Shelde to ber an honde. And also they wer not trewe to har Subiectis, ne dredfull to har enemys. They had not that * good Herte, ne of good Kynde Hit come to Ham, forto Spare the meke, and wreke Ham on the Prowte; but al the contrary thay did. Thay Sparid and fikyllid wyth the sterne, and toke and Pullid the meke, and them that noone harme did // Vndyr whych gouernors, the Irysh-men begon to be Prowde, and to haue the Maystry of the Englysh-men, and branten, and Slayne, and Stellen / For thay Maysteris, wyth har meny, heldyn² ham at al tymys in the Citteis vpon the see-syde, ther Plente was of wyne and of women, to the wyche thay yaue ham clenly to. But the lond wyth-In, and the marchis nexte har enemys, and the castelis and the tounes that weryn a-myde, weryn lefte and brante, the men robyd and Slayn, wyth-out any resistence. The good knyghtes and the eldyr Pepill of the londe, as men that noght is tolde by, that tyme wythdrow ham al Slyly, and held ham al styлле, for-to witte al Softe what Ende Suche grete Stormys sholde haue. That tyme, the state of the londe was Suche, In al Placis was wepyng and cryenge, and myche Sorrow. All the weyes was lefte, that no man trustid not to mete with anothyr; euery day come newe tythyngis of brennyng and Sleyng, robberyng and rewyng in the out-landis. Vnneth a lytyll Sadow of Pees was in the burgage tounes³, ther the wyne quenched al the Sorrow; the golde and the syluere, al the harmys. Thar thay Sholde, in so wyckyd a tyme, goo from contray to contray wyth Pepill y-wepenyd, and correcte ham that did amys; Thay Syttyn Iustices of benche in hare Roobis of Scarlete and menywere; men with Swerdis and battis forto kepe ham, ther no nede was. Than was the motyng, the pledyng, and reuyng of goode men and trew, that noone harme didde. Wors hame didd the harme and the angyr that thay ther through haddyn / than the robberyng and reuyng that har enemys ham dide // Anothyr thyng that gretly is to mowrne, be-felle also, wher-of god was

A. D. 1185.

¹ *Stipendiaria quippe familia, suos imitata magistris, suisque maioribus morem gerens.*

[*Fol. 27 a.]

² [heldym MS.]
vino venerique data, maritimis in urbibus moram assidue faciebat.

Antiqua vero militia novorum ingruente malitia, tanquam vilis et reprobata, latuit interim et siluit.

³ *sed solum in urbibus pacis ut cumque servari umbra videbatur.*

[See the Latin below, p. 152.]

A. D. 1185. rewe byfelle also, whar̄-of gode was worste I-quemed: Ther
 prince cometh newly to lond̄ hyt becometh welle that he wyrshype
 god & holy chyrch, mayntenynge the ryghtes, & yeue more there-to.
 Bot þe newe prynce nat only held hym from that for to eche the 4
 good of holy chyrch, bot londes & rentes & pryuyleges that thay of
 old world hadde & vsed, at hys fyrst comynge yn many places he
 bename al clene; yñ other̄ places he chaunged, & yaue wors & lasse
 thar̄ for̄; & hyt may wel be, þat hys spede yn othere thynges was 8
 euer the wors & noght þe bettyr̄. On thys maner the englysshe
 weren̄ both argh & woke to assayllen and to fyght, þe Iresshe
 stronge & bold to wythstonde, tyl that þe new prynce saue openly 12
 that al thyng vnder̄ hys newe meñ yede to loste; he chaunget
 ham & renued, as meñ that nothyng couth, & drogh̄ to hym the
 old knyghtes & the good meñ that waren̄ ther-to-for̄ Ivsed to
 fyght yn the maner of þe lond, & sette Iohn de Curcy maystre & 16
 chefteyne of al thyng that was to done; vnder whom̄ þe state &
 þe pees of the lond, by as mych began anooñ ryght to amend, as
 Iohn, of hert & of staluarthnesshe, passed al other̄, passynge &
 through sechyng the Inlondes, as Desmone, Thomone, Mounesteŕ,
 Connaght; & let nat the meygne vndo hamselŕ wyth oft harme & 20
 lostes, doynge to hys fomen, & oft to hym-self & to hys, as he that
 noght was adredde to assaye þe vnsyker̄ aduentures of fyght & of
 baret.

[CHAPTER LXI.]

Prince
 John had
 three sets
 of men: 1.
 Normans,
 the worst,
 whom he
 trusted
 most; 2.
 the Eng-
 lish he
 brought
 with him;
 3. the Eng-
 lish in Ire-
 land, the
 best, whom
 he trusted
 least.

¹ The yonge prynce at the begynnynge hadde wyth 24
 hym thre manere of meygne, Normannes,
 Englysshe, & þe Englysshe that he found yn the lond. In wyr-
 shype, gret frenshype, & loue, he hold the fyrst & the worst; In
 lasse, the mydmest & the better; In allerleste, the latest & þe 28
 beste. The fyrst ne myght nat lyue wyth-out wyn, yn whyche thay
 weren̄ fostred; & for-thy thay forsoken̄ on al wyse to beñ yn
 marches & yn castels fer̄ from the see I-sette; no-wheŕ bot about
 the kynges sone & hys body, kepe thay myght nat be, & hym folwen, 32
 & negh hym be, wyth-out any departynge. fer̄ from the weste &

¹ The usual large initial letter is omitted here, a space being left for it in
 which a small t is put.

moste dysplesyd. Ther Prynce comyth newly to londe, hit becomyth that he wirchippe god and holy church, mayntenynge the ryghtes, *and* yeue more therto. But the new Prynce, not oonly helde hym frome that, forto eche the good of hooly church; but londis and rentis *and* Pryuylegis that thay of olde Worlde hadde *and* vsyd / At his fryst comynge, in many Placis he toke al elene, and in othyr Placis he chaungid, *and* yaued Wors and lasse therfor. And hit may wel be, that his Spede in othyr thyngis was euer the wors, *and* nocht the bettyr. On this maner the Englysh-men wer both febill and feynte to assayen and to fyght, and the Irysh-men bolde *and* stronge to wythstonde, till that the new Prynce opynly Saw that al thyng vndyr his new men yede to loste. he chaunged ham, *and* remewid as men that nothyng kowth, *and* drewe to hym the olde knyghtes, and the good men that weryn therto-for y-vsyd to fyght in the maner of the londe, And Sette Ihōn de Curcy, Maystyr and captayn of al thyng that was to doun, Vndyr Whom the State and the Pees of the londe, by as-mych began anoone ryght to amende, as Ihōn, of herte * *and* of Boldnys, Passid all othyr, Passynge *and* throw shechyng the In-Londys, As Desmonde, Thomon, Mownyster, Connaght, *and* lette not the meny Vndo ham-Selfe wyth ofte harme *and* lostis, doynge to his ennemys *and* ofte to hym-Selfe *and* to his, as he that nocht was adrede to assay the vnsure aduentures of fyght And of battaylle.

A. D. 1185.
nihil de novo conferentes . . . quinimmo terris statim sublatis et possessionibus . . .
hostibus autem ad rebellandum audacissimis.
summam rerum gerendarum curam commisit.
 [*Fol. 27 b.]
penitimas terrae partes.
incertam bellici certaminis aleam.

[CHAPTER LXI.]

The yonge Prynce at the begynnyng hadd with hym thre maner of menny, Normanes, Englyssh, and the Englyssh that he founde in the londe / In grete wyrchipp, frendshipp and loue, he helde the fryste and the worste. In lasse, the Secoude and the bettyr. And in alltherleste, the latyste and the beste. The fryste myght not lyue wyth-out wyn, in whych they weryn fosterid; And therfor thay forsoke to be in marchis and in castelis ferre frome the See ysette¹ / *and*² myght not be in no Place but aboute the kyngis Sone, (*and* [from] his body, kepe thay myght not be,) and hym followyn, *and* ney to hym be, *with*-out any departynge. ferre from the Weste, and ney to the Eeste; Fer from

Capitulum lxj^m.
In summa familiaritate primos habuimus.
² *solum filii regis latera stipare, solum filio regis inseparabiliter assistere.*

¹ Primi vino, quo nutriti fuerant, carere non volentes, in remotis marchis, et castris procul a mari constructis, moram facere modis omnibus recusabant.—
Op. v. 394-5.

A. D. 1185. negh al eeste ; fer from myssayse, & negh ayse, thay wyll et euer to
 John's be sette. ¶ I anglers & bosters, & of grette othes, and stronge
 young men lyers, foderes, whybelers, Moch told by ham-self throug pryde, &
 were lytel by other ; yiftes & wyrshype to receyue, thay wer the fyrst ; 4
 boasters, liars, bribe- takers. dout & perrylle to receyue, thay war euer the laste. The lytel good
 that thay dydde that wyth hym comen, that was throug the englysshe that he wyth hym broght ; bot thay was no thyng
 derward wyth hym ayeysn the other, that no good ne couth do. 8
 He forsook And for the good knyghtes & the men throug whych the wey ynto
 the good the lond was fyrst I-opened, wer wyth ham bot as forsaken &
 old Eng- forlete ; non I-cleppeth to consaylle bot the newe ; to non trusted
 lishneu, he bot to the newe ; to non was wyrshype I-do bot to the newe. 12
 Hyt byfelle, that whan thay other wythdrowe ham for such thyng,
 & lete ham I-worth, yn al thyng that thay dydde, lytel or night
 thay sp[ed]de. Such gyltes & so many, thegh thay both wer myche 16
 to wite, yong old & yonge rede, natheles þe yonge lydde rede was
 the wise more gilty ; ffore boustyous lond and vnredy, hadde al nede to be
 whom the rebels needed. Irotet and I-kept throug wyse men & redy.

[CHAPTER LXII.]

John
 builds three
 Castles, at
 Ardfinan,
 Lismore,
 Tybragh.

[*Fol. 7
 b.]

Three
 Knights
 are slain.
 R. Fitz-
 Hugh, &c.

Men of
 Thomond,
 or Lim-
 erick,
 slain ; and
 O'Grady (?)
 Dermot,
 King of
 Desmond
 dies.

¹ Afty that the kynges sone hadde the lordshype
 of Irland, & ynto the lond was y-come, Aduentures byfelle ²⁰
 that maysty Gerot shortly toucheth. Of thre castels that he
 anoñ ryght lete rere, on at Ardfynan, anothe at lysmore, the
 thyrd at Tybraghnych. Of thre staluarth * knyghtes that throug
 grete mesaduentur weren I-slawe, Robert de Barry at Lysmore ; ²⁴
 Reymond, hughes sone, at Olethan ; Reymon of Canteton yn
 Osserye. Of a partye of the meygne of Ardfynan that the kyng
 of Thomon descomfyted yn a wod per negh on a mydsomyr day,
 And four knyghtes that ther wer y-slaw ; & thay of Tothmon the ²⁸
 sam day wer dyscomfyt to-for Tybragh ; & a grete Iresshe-man,
 Ograde, was ther I-slawe, wyth many othe of the meygne of
 Ardfynan, that sone afty, yn a prey-takyng toward lymeryke
 weyes dyscomfyte, & xix knyghtes I-slawe. Of the prynce Of ³²
 Desmon, Dermot Maccarthy, that with many othe yn a parlement

¹ The usual large initial letter is omitted, space being left for it.

myssayse, *and* nygh toayse, thaywolde euer to be sette. // Iangleris, A. D. 1185. bosteris, and of grete othis, stronge lyeris, lycheres, Why-beleres, Moche sette by ham-selfe for Pride, *and* lytill by otheres: yiftis and wyrchipp to rescewe, thay were the fryst; Dowte and Peril to rescewe, thay wer euer the laste. The lytill good that thay didd' that wyth hym comyn, that was throughe the Englyssⁿ that he wyth hym broght. But thay was nothyng Derward wyth hym agaynys the othyr, that no good ne couth do / And for the good knyghtes and the men, throw whych the wey into the lond was fryste oppenyd, wer wyth ham but as forsakyn *and* forlete / non callid to consaill, but the newe; to noone trustid he¹, but to the new; to noone was wirchipp dōnē, but to the newe. ² Hit befel that, whan thay othyr wythdrow hame for Suche thyng, *and* lette ham alone, wyth al thyng that thay did, Lytell or noght thay Spede. Such gyltes *and* So many, thegh thay both wer mych to witte, yonge elde *and* yonge rede, natheles the yonge lewid consaylle was mor gylty; For bostious, loude *and* vnredy, hadd grete nede to be y-rotid *and* y-kepete throughe wysmen *and* redy.

verboſi, jactatores, enormium juramentorum auctores.
solum novis fidem habentes,
solum novos dignos honore putavimus.
effectum est ut illis se retrahentibus, et invitis operas non ingerentibus, in cunctis agendis parum isti profecissent.

[CHAPTER LXII.]

Aftyr that tyme that the kynges Sone hadde the lordshipp of Irland; ^{Capitulum lxij^m.} *and* into the londe was come, adventures befell that Maystyr geraude Sortely touchyth. Of th[r]ecastelis that he anoone ryght lette rere, oone at ardfynan, another at lysmore, the thyrde at Tybraght. Of thre bolde *and* hardy knyghtes, that throw gret mysadventure weryn slayne, Robert de Barry at lysmore, Reymond Hughes-sonne at Olethan, Reymond of Canteton in Ossory. Of a party of the meny of ardfynan, that the kyng of Thomonⁿ descomfited in a wodde ther neygh, On a Mydsomer day, *and* four knyghtes that were Slayn; *and* thay of Thomonde the same day wer discomfite to-*for tybraght; *and* a grete Irysⁿ-man, Odrade, Was ther Slayn, wyth many othyr Of the meny of ardfynan, that Sone aftyr in a pray-takyng toward lymerike weies Discomfite³, *and* xix knyghtes wer Slayn. Of the Prynce of Desmonde, Dermot Maccarthy, that *with* many othyr in

fatis adversis et aversis.
De parte quadam Archphinnensis familia.
[*Fol. 28 a.]
De . . . Oggravi interemptione.

³ in praedae captione versus Limericum confectis.—Op. v. 386.

A. D. 1185. besyde Corke, throgħ Tybaud wauter & the meygne of Corke, was
 Ulstermen I-slawe. Of the meñ of kenalayne, that to boldely wentteñ ynto
 slain. Mythe to preyen, & ther weren I-slawe throgħ Wylliam le petyt,
 Saints' & an hundert heedes of ham I-brogħt to dyuelyñ. Of otheṛ holy 4
 bodies found. bodyes, patryke, Bryde, &, Colmekyl, at douz I-found, & by Iohn de
 Hugh de Courcy weṛ translated; of hugh de lacy, that to trysty was vpon
 Laci slain, hys Iresshe-meñ, & by traysoñ of ham was I-heded at dernagh.
 A. D. 1186. ¶ Of thretten knyghtes, that vnder Iohn de Courcy weren I-slawe 8
 at a comynge out of Connaght. Of the staluarth yonge knyght
 Roger le Roger the poweṛ, that wyth many of hys, throgħ traysone, yn
 Poer slain. Osserye was I-slawe; & throgħ that thyng, al the Iresshe of the
 The Irish The Irish silently conspire, destroy castles, and kill men.
 the lond styilly sworne ham to-gyddyr ayeyns the Englysshe; wheṛ 12
 throgħ that, ¹ castels yn many places weren I-cast adoun, many
 meñ I-slawe, to grete perrylle to al the lond; & of many otheṛ
 adventures that betydded aftyr that the kynges sone was lord of
 Irland, of whyche maystyṛ Geraud, ham & haṛ gestes leueth to 16
 other that ham wrytte wold, & lust hadden ther-to ¹. And as thys
 An end maked of thys boke.

¹⁻¹ destructis castris pluribus, gravi insulae universae perturbatione: non indigna memoratu singula, translato in filium regis jam regni dominio, sua suorumque gesta suis assignando scriptoribus, ad ulteriora simul et utiliora festinamus.—*Op.* v. 387-8.

The unenglisht last Chapters.

Thus ends Ch. 35 of Giraldus's 2nd Book of his *Expugnacio*. His Ch. 36 is our 60, pp. 142-7, with an added Vision of 'Prince John marking out the foundations of a church, with a large nave and a very small chancel.' His Ch. 37 is our 61, pp. 146-9. In his Ch. 38, he states how the Irish are to be conquerd: in Ch. 39, how they are to be governd. Mr. Dimock's side-notes to these two Chapters are:

Ch. 38. "In every expedition, the counsel of those ought to be followed, who are best acquainted with the country and manners

a parlement besyde Corke, through Tybaud Wauter *and* the meny of Corke, was y-Slayñ. Of the men of kynnaleÿñ, that So boldely wentyn Into Myth, ther to take a pray, *and* ther weryn Slayñ through Willam le Petyte, and an C. hedys of ham broght to Deuelyn // Of othyr hooly bodies, Patrike, Bryde, and Colmekil / at doun y-found, *and* by Ihoñ de Curcy were translated. Of Hugh de lacy, that to trysty was vpon his Irysh-men, *And* by traysone of ham was hedid at Dernagh // Of xiije knyghtes, that vndyr Ihoñ de Curcy weryn Slayn at a comynge out of connaght; of the bolde yonge knyght, Roger the Powere, that wyth many of his, throw trayson, in Ossory was Slayñ; *And* Throw that thyng, all the Irysh-men of the londe Pryuely Sworne ham to-giddy ayeyñes the Englyssh-men; Wherthrow that, castellis in many Places weryn caste dovne, *and* many men Slayñ, in Peril of al the londe. *And* of many othyr aduentures that by chanse fell, aftyr that the kynges sonne was lorde of Irlande, the whych Maystyr Geraud, ham and har gestis lewyth to othyr that ham write wille, *and* luste haw therto; *And* as thus an ende makyth of this boke.

A. D. 1185.
*in colloquio
 prope Cor-
 cagiam, a
 Corcagien-
 sibus
 et Theo-
 baldi
 Gualteri
 familia
 ferro
 peremptis.
 Dernagh in
 fercall.
 et ejusdem
 casus occa-
 sione,
 clandestina
 quoque
 totius
 Hibernici
 populi in
 Anglos con-
 juratione.*

**Et Sic finis est istius Libri.
 Laus deo clementissimo.**

of the people. The great difference between French warfare, and that of Ireland and Wales [is]: In these countries, light-armed troops [are] more especially necessary. In any expedition into Ireland or Wales, the troops of the Welsh Marches [are] by far the best. In Irish warfare, archers [ought] to be united with the cavalry. The three parts of the island on this side the Shannon [ought] to be well incastellated; the other part won by degrees.

Ch. 39. The necessity of firm, severe, but moderate rulers. In time of peace, castles [ought] to be built, and roads to be

improved. The Irish, once fully subjected, [ought] to be forbidden the use of arms; [and] meanwhile not to be allowed to bear the axe. [They ought] to pay an annual tribute in gold or birds."

Giraldus's Third Book tells how he found and translated the Prophecies of Merlin of Celidon.

When John became King of England, Giraldus sent him a copy of his *Topographia* and *Expugnatio*, with a Proem or Dedicatory Letter printed in the Rolls edition, v. 405-411. It reminds John of Ireland, exhorts him not to forget *it*, the Golden Isle, in favour of England, the Silver one; says it will form a kingdom for one of his sons; warns him that he must leave no danger behind him in Ireland when he goes to recover the foreign possessions he has lost; calls on him to fulfil Henry II's pledges to Pope Adrian, that is, to exalt the Church in Ireland and pay Peter's pence; instances God's vengeance on the non-keeping of these pledges; says how miserable the state of the Irish Church is; and advises John to take an annual tribute of gold, birds, or trees, from the Irish in token of subjection. Lastly, Giraldus asks that a scholar may translate his books into French; gives Walter Map's opinion on his own talk and Giraldus's writings; and says that he (Giraldus) is now old, and 'desires only God's favour and the appreciation of his labours by posterity.'

pp. 144-5, lines 9-2 from foot. The side-note and Latin in the Rolls edition, v. 392, are:

Prevalence
of law-
suits.

Praeterea, quamquam hostilitatis instante procella, armatae militiae tempus ingruerit, non togatae, tanta tamen civilium causarum urgebat importunitas, ut miles veteranus non tam hoste foris, quam intus foro vexaretur.

As to the state of Ireland in 1515, see the document printed in my *Ballads from MSS.* (Ballad Soc.), p. 38-40.

GLOSSARY

(MAINLY)

BY THOMAS AUSTIN.

- & (and), an, a, 2/3, 116/7; & noon, anon, 72/18.
- A**, *prep.* on, 12/17, 16/35; in, 44/8; by, 66/2.
- Abate**, *vb.* flutter the wings, 56/32. Used like *Bate*.
- Aboue**, *adv.* above, he was all a., had the upper hand, 120/3; abouen, 116/27; abow, 117/26, 121/3.
- Abydyng**, *sb.* expectation, 111/33.
- Abydyng**, *vb.* a. aftyr ham, waiting for them, 124/28.
- Adde**, *vb.* had, 68/2.
- A-fryght**, *pp.* frightened, afraid, 114/22.
- Agryse**, *pp.* terrified, 100/2.
- Agylte**, *vb.* sin, 88/1.
- Aleueth**, *num. adj.* eleven, 118/14. See opposite page.
- Allerformest**, foremost of all, 50/24; alther-formyst, 51/24.
- Allerleste**, least of all, 146/28; alltherleste, 147/28.
- Aller-next**, next of all, 12/33; alther-nexte, 13/34.
- Allience**, *sb.* alliance, allies, 73/27, 87/8.
- Allyees**, *sb.* allies, 72/27. Fr. *alliés*.
- Alonge**, *adv.* always, 54/29.
- Alout**, *adv.* all out, or aloud, 104/12.
- Althyr**, 101/3, ? either.
- Aly**, *adj.* holy, 42/36.
- Amaied**, *pp.* amayed, dismayed, 12/16; amayed, 16/31, 20/33, 56/5.
- Amonneschyd**, *vb.* admonished, warned, 57/13; amonessed, 93/10; amonested, 56/13, 92/10.
- An**, *prep.* on: an-heghe, on high, 112/34, an-hey, 113/34; an-hond, in hand, 74/17; an-hors, on horseback, 58/25, 100/28; an Iresshe, in Irish, 116/33.
- Anguysshes**, *sb.* anguishes, anxieties, 96/13; angwyschis, 97/13.
- Anguysshous**, *adj.* anxious, 104/8. O.Fr. *anguissus*.
- Anone ryght**, *adv.* straightway, 148/22; anoone-ryght, 82/2.
- Aplesid**, *pp.* a. of, pleased with, 37/35.
- Ar**, *pron.* their, 8/17. See *Har*.
- Ar**, *conj.* ere, 8/9, 22/23, 74/34; are, before, 9/10; before, 58/10.
- Ared**, *vb.* tell, declare, 97/25; arede, 96/26.
- Arere**, *vb.* lift up, stir up, 22/1; set right, heal, restore, 44/5; restore, rebuild, 106/9; areren, raise, 44/15; arered, raised, 30/16; arrere, 23/1.
- Arew**, arow, in a row, 71/13; a rewe, 70/13.
- Argh**, *adj.* timid, cowardly, 16/30, 114/6 (feinte, 115/6)¹.
- Argly**, *adv.* timidly, in a cowardly way, 16/23 (fently, 17/23)¹.
- Arreden**, *vb.* eared, ploughed, cultivated, 128/7; Erredyn, 129/7.
- Artrow**, *sb.* overtrow, mistrust, suspicion, 133/13; ortrow, 132/14.

¹ In all old words like *argh*, *arghly*, the reader should look on the opposite page for the Rawlinson MS. equivalent, which is generally later, tho' for the Dublin *ar[y]ved*, 24/34, the Rawlinson has *londide*.

- Aryse**, *vb.* arise, rebel, 132/5; arryse, 133.
- Aryued**, *vb.* arrived, landed, 24/34.
- As**, *conj.* for *ac*, but, 4/2.
- Asquynt**, *adv.* asquint, aslant, obliquely, 94/20.
- Assemble**, *vb.* join battle, 24/15, 30/26.
- Assembly**, *vb.* assemble, 64/5.
- Asseth**, *sb.* satisfaction, penance, 86/23.
- Astage**, *sb.* hostage, 24/23.
- Astryf**, *adv.* astrife, emulously, with rivalry, 50/26.
- Atene**, *vb.* vex, irritate, 38/24.
- Ather**, *conj.* either, or, 100/3. Note pronunciation.
- A thre**, in three parts, 104/26; at thre, 67/19.
- Attyre**, *sb.* venom, 20/23, 102/27, 114/2.
- Auctorice**, *vb.* legalise, set in authority, 107/27 (avaunce, 106/27).
- Aurel**, *sb.* April, 77/28; aurl, 76/28.
- A-waitede**, *vb.* watcht, expected, 2/19.
- Awayward**, *adv.* awayward, off the land, *i. e.* westwardly, 66/33; away, 130/19.
- Awreke**, *vb.* a. hym, awreak himself, avenge himself, 4/5.
- A yere**, *adv.* yearly, 66/2.
- Ayeyne**, *prep.* against, on the approach of, 130/2; *adv.* again, 130/3.
- Ayeyns**, *prep.* against, to meet, 54/13.
- Ayse**, *sb.* ease, 148/1.
- Bad**, *vb.* prayed, 28/11.
- Baghel**, *sb.* bagle, crosier, 122/13, 123/12; baghell, 122/12. *L. baculum.*
- Bale**, *sb.* sorrow, evil, 20/24.
- Baret**, *sb.* barrat, strife, battle, 146/23.
- Barnen**, *vb.* burnt, 54/4.
- Battes**, *sb.* bats, sticks, staves, 144/28; battis, 145/31.
- Becomlyche**, *adj.* becoming, comely, 76/14; becomly, 102/20; becumliche, 54/24.
- Becryed**, *vb.* cryed to, called on, 30/32, 46/20.
- Begetes**, *sb.* begets, gains, 81/15; be-yetes, 80/15.
- Begynnyge**, *vb.* begin, 54/21.
- Be-heght**, *pp.* promised, 40/9; be-het, *vb.* promised, 18/34; behete, 28/19, 114/29.
- Behoud**, *sb.* behoof, benefit, 112/30.
- Behowaybyll**, *adj.* behovable, needful, suitable, 121/4; covenable, D.
- Belad**, *pp.* narrow b., treated them straitly or hardly, 40/21; bilad hym, led him, lived, 2/9; hard biladde, *vb.* treated hardly, 2/6; bylad, 41/22; by-ladde, conducted, bore, 54/12.
- Beleft**, *vb.* remained, 118/14; *pp.* remaining, left, 58/10.
- Belokene**, *pp.* shutin, 50/12; belokken, 51/12. See *Belouke*, N. E. D.
- Belyggynge**, *vb.* beleaguering, beleaguering, 104/5.
- Be-name**, *vb.* forbad, 31/9; be-nomen, *pp.* taken away, 60/34; byname, deprive of, 100/9.
- Berewid**, *vb.* bereft of, 45/5; berewys, bereave, *imper.*, 35/10.
- Berre**, *vb.* bear, 145/2.
- Besech**, *vb.* beseek, try to get, cast at, show to, 110/30 (malynge agaynys, 111/30).
- Besete**, *vb.* beset, blockade, 48/16; *pp.* set, possess, 102/19; besette, 103/19.
- Be-taght**, *vb.* betook, gave, committed, entrusted, 86/14.
- Be-tak**, *vb.* accompanied, 20/18; be-take, 21/18; betaken, settled, arranged, 72/31; betoke, entrusted to, 108/27.
- Betheght**, *vb.* betook, gave to, 92/11; betoke, 93/11.
- Bethwene**, *prep.* between, 10/12.
- Blote**, *adj.* soft, marshy, wet, 122/3.
- Blywe**, *adv.* belive, quickly, 29/30.
- Bolnys**, *sb.* boldness, 111/35.
- Bolthenys**, *sb.* boldness, 75/15.
- Bostious**, *adj.* rough, boisterous, 149/17; boustyous, 148/17.
- Bot**, *adj.* both, 106/12.
- Bot**, *conj.* but, unless, 68/13, 106/12; bot yf, unless, 78/30.
- Both**, *conj.* but, 14/34, 22/7, 32/25, 50/4; bott, 22/32; bot, 106/12.
- Boxome**, *adj.* obedient, loyal, non-rebellious, 32/29.
- Boxom-fastines**, *sb.* buxomfastness

- firm obedience, 62/18; buxumfast-nys, 63/18.
- Branden**, *vb.* burnt, 14/24; brandyn, 15; branten, 120/33.
- Brouken**, *vb.* brook, enjoy, hold, 34/13.
- Buryles**, *sb.* buryels, burials, graves, 37/21; (pute, pits, 36/18).
- Buttellerie**, *sb.* butlery, buttery, 62/27. O. Fr. *bouteillerie*.
- By**, *vb.* be, 106/15.
- By**, *prep.* about, near, 15/6; by so, on these terms, 24/23; by forward, by agreement, 74/9; by-halues, besides, aside, 74/24; by so that, on the terms that, 24/23.
- Bygger**, *sb.* buyer, 40/2, 7.
- Byled**, *vb.* built, 128/10.
- Bynyn**, *vb.* benime, take away, 68/22.
- Byssy**, *adj.* busy, 99/18.
- Byth**, *vb.* beeth, are, 33/26.
- Cabyls**, *sb.* cables, 13/12.
- Calange**, *sb.* challenge, claim, 21/1. O. Fr. *Calanger*.
- Campled**, *vb.* wrangled, contended, fought, 74/33; camplid, 75/33.
- Camplynges**, *sb.* wranglings, contests, battles, 126/13.
- Candrede**, *sb.* cantred, hundred, 56/21; cantred, 8/19, 12/33; a Candrede is 'an hundret toun lond' (100 townlands or townships), 124/2.
- Castel**, *vb.* castle, fortify, 127/22; castely, 126/22; casteled, 128/3.
- Cee**, *sb.* see: Cee church, Cathedral, 37/31.
- Chamfaste**, *adj.* shamefast, 76/13.
- Chase**, *pp.* chosen, 124/12.
- Cheffar**, *sb.* trade, 12/7.
- Chek-toth**, *sb.* cheek-tooth, grinder, double tooth, 108/8.
- Chepmen**, *sb.* chapmen, 38/33.
- Cheuetayn**, *sb.* chieftain, 26/11.
- Chippe**, *sb.* ship, 13/13; chippis, ships, 13/6.
- Chippmen**, *sb.* shipmen, 13/10.
- Churchey**, *sb.* churchyard, 71/26; church-hay, 63/32.
- Clene**, *adv.* clean, quite, entirely, 146/7.
- Clenly**, *adv.* cleanly, quite, wholly, 121/3, 145/15; clenlych, 120/3.
- Clepynge**, *sb.* calling, call, 76/2.
- Clewe**, *vb.* cleft, clave, 31/34, 71/32.
- Clos**, *sb.* close, enclosed land, 10/5.
- Come**, *sb.* arrival, coming, 108/15, 120/30; comys, 109/15.
- Comerous**, *adj.* cumbrous, difficult to pass, 54/8.
- Comynly**, *adv.* in common, together, 34/33, 38/30.
- Condicones**, *sb.* 125/15; theves, 124/15.
- Conquestre**, *sb.* conquest, 56/22. O. Fr.
- Constytucions**, *sb.* constitutions, laws, 64/26.
- Cornelis**, *sb.* crenelles, battlements, 16/31.
- Corpus domini**, *sb.* mass-wafer, 52/23.
- Coste**, *sb.* purpose (R.), 68/4, 74/17.
- Costes**, *sb.* coasting-vessels?, 80/5.
- Croice**, *sb.* cross, 36/29; cros, 37/29. O. Fr. *crois*.
- Croun**, *sb.* crown of the head, 42/27; croune, 42/24.
- Culuertnesse**, *sb.* falseness, villainy, 126/31.
- Cytteyns**, *sb.* citizens, 122/27. O. Fr. *citeien*; *citayn*.
- Dawes**, *sb.* days, out of d. = out of life, 34/10, 76/4.
- Defended**, *vb.* = defendeth, let us defend, *imper.*, 20/28.
- Defeuily**, *vb.* defoul, tread under foot, 35/29; defouly, 34/29.
- Dele**, *sb.* deal, part, 62/21.
- Deled**, *vb.* dealt, divided, 104/25.
- Delycion**, ? *sb.* daintiness, 98/13.
- Delycious**, *adj.* delicate, dainty, 99/14.
- Demyd**, *pp.* deemed, doomed, sentenced, 35/15.
- Dennysh**, 46/17; Danish.
- Derne**, *adj.* hidden, 18/30, 114/22.
- Dernely**, *adv.* secretly, privily, 78/8.
- Derward**, *adj.* dearworth, precious, 110/34; derwarthest, most valuable, 36/25.
- Destrued**, *pp.* destroyed, 106/10.
- Deue**, *adj.* deaf, 44/13.
- Deynously**, *adv.* disdainfully, 72/3.
- Didden**, dydde, *vb.* See *Do*.
- Do**, *vb.* put, 30/6, 38/34, 94/16; turn, 76/6; done hym on, set him on, 100/3; didde, *past t.* turned, 16/31; didden, set, 10/1; dydde, set, 70/7.

- Dobbe, *vb.* dub, 94/13.
 Dome, *sb.* judgment, 34/14.
 Dotous, *adj.* doubtful, uncertain, 86/17; doutos, 87/17; doutouse, 24/13.
 Doute, *vb.* fear, 24/15.
 Drawen, *vb.* protract, lead, 50/4.
 Dredlyche, *adj.* dreadly, dreadful, terrible, 114/9.
 Drent, *vb.* drowned, 32/5.
 Durke, *adj.* dark, 50/9.
 Durknesse, *sb.* darkness, 50/10.
 Durre, *sb.* door, 42/22.
 Dyd, *vb.* set, placed, 74/29. See *Do*.
 Dynt, *sb.* dint, stroke, 46/17.
 Dysheryted, *vb.* 40/20; disinherited.
 D for th, 16/34.
 Day, *pron.* they, 10/19, 12/21, 24/10.
 Drogh, *prep.* through, 12/24, 14/8, 18/9, 22/7.
 I-Drow, *pp.* thrown, 18/1.
 Dyng, *sb.* thing, 88/27.

 Eche, *vb.* increase, 146/4.
 Edwyte, *vb.* reprov'd, twitted, rebuked, 60/9.
 Eft, *adv.* after, 82/13, 88/26, 90/1 eft, 108/29.
 Elde, *sb.* eld, age, 58/30.
 Eldren, (*adj.*)? *sb.* forefathers' (or ancestral), 38/17; eldryñ, 39/17.
 Eldrene, *sb.* ancestors, 28/6, 7; eldryn, 29/6, 7.
 Elf (fare), 17/13; helf (fare), 16/14; elves' doings.
 Eme, *sb.* eam, nephew, 31/14, 73/35; emys, 15/33, 101/15.
 Enchesoun, *sb.* occasion, cause, 88/2, 20/16.
 Encombremnt, *sb.* encumberment, obstruction, annoyance, harm, 22/13.
 Eneche, *vb.* (? increase) inche, im-plant, 92/1.
 Engyn, *sb.* art, contrivance, 18/28.
 Ense, *sb.* ends, 80/29.
 Entre, *sb.* entry, 54/6; entrest, 55/7.
 Entredyte, *vb.* interdict, lay under interdict, 68/15.
 Enuy, *sb.* envy, 20/19.
 Enuyouse, *adj.* envious, 114/6; en-uyouse, emulous, 100/2.
 Er, *adv.* ere, before, 120/29.
 Erne, *vb.* earn, mourn, 34/28.

 Erne, *sb.* eagle, 114/18.
 Ers, *sb.* ears, 15/24.
 Erthe-weyes, *sb.* ways under ground, 19/30.
 Erth-hous, *sb.* underground dwelling, 120/31.
 Estren, *adj.* eastern, east, 28/27.
 Ette, *vb.* ate, 89/22.
 Eunyng, *sb.* evening, equal, peer, 54/19.
 Evyncrystyñ, *sb.* fellow - christian, 39/11, 67/14.
 Exstymacioun, *sb.* suspicion, 129/14. O. Fr. *exstimation*.
 Eygne, *sb.* eyes, 97/17.

 Facon, *sb.* falcon, 58/4; faucoun gentel, 56/30.
 Fale, *adj.* fele, many, 74/10, 86/4.
 Falthyr, *sb.* fautors, favorers, partisans, 79/7. Fr. *fauteur*.
 Fantstones, *sb.* fontstones, stone fonts, 64/33; fantstonys, 65.
 Farcostes, *sb.* far-coasters?, 80/5, 81/5.
 Fawes, *sb.* falls?, heavy, things dropt, 96/2; fawis, 97/2.
 Febelier, *adj.* more feeble, 69/5.
 Fele, *adj.* many, 16/10.
 Felony, *sb.* villany, 102/3.
 ffer, *adv.* f. within-yn nyght, far into the night, 16/9.
 Ferd, *sb.* host, army, 14/5.
 Ferde, *sb.* fear, 17/14.
 Ferdnesse, *sb.* fear, fright, 20/29, 38/27.
 Ferly, *adj.* strange, 16/29.
 Ferly, *adv.* wonderfully?, 16/12.
 Fersly, *adv.* fiercely, 17/11.
 Ferth, *num. adj.* fourth, 118/19.
 Festnen, *vb.* make firm, restore, 44/14.
 Feynte, *adj.* faint, idle, 115/6.
 Feyre, *adv.* far, 50/34.
 Fikyllid, *vb.* temporised, 145/9.
 Fleted, *vb.* floated, 116/26.
 Fletes, *sb.* fleets, 80/9; flittes, 81/9; flot, 126/23; flytte, 127/23.
 Fleysly, *adj.* fleshly, fleshy, 100/1.
 Flittes, *sb.* See *Fletes*.
 Flote, *sb.* fleet, herd of swine, 74/1.
 Flowen, *vb.* fled, 96/21.
 Fobler, *adj.* feebler, 68/6.
 Foderes, *sb.* deceivers, 148/3.

- Folk, *adj.* ? for foble, feeble, 50/15.
 Folke-mele, indiscriminately, 36/3.
 Foolrede, *sb.* fool's counsel, foolery, folly, 68/20; fooly, 69.
 Foot-falle, *vb.* prostrate oneself, 62/18.
 For, *conj.* in order that, 104/24.
 Forcleue, *vb.* cleft, 58/2; for-clew, 59/2.
 Fore-lete, *vb.* let go, 68/29.
 For-hold, *pp.* withheld, kept unburied, 108/14.
 Forlese, *vb.* forelost, lost, 54/11.
 Formane, *sb.* leader, 36/1; formene, front ranks, 30/33.
 Forme, *adj.* first, 64/15; formest, *super.*, 50/28; formyst, 51.
 Forshape, *pp.* misshapen, 130/25.
 Forsoke, *vb.* renounce, refuse, decline, 4/13, 78/17; for-sok, 72/16.
 Forsoken, *vb.* declined, 104/12.
 Forswely, *vb.* swallow up, 58/27.
 Fort, *conj.* till, 84/27, 126/11.
 Fortelet, *sb.* fortlet, 116/6.
 Forth, (before 'with') *adv.* forthwith, 20/5, 90/20, 104/32.
 For-pane, *conj.* Nat f. notwithstanding, 4/1.
 For-they, *conj.* therefore, 73/22; ffor-thy, 72/23.
 Forthmost, *adj.* foremost, 16/4.
 Forume, *sb.* form, 39/12.
 Forwarde, *sb.* bargain, 10/12; agreement, 74/9, 108/30; forward-makynge, m. of agreements, 128/9.
 Fourdyr, *adv.* further, 15/25.
 Franchise, *sb.* freedom, 20/15.
 Fresly, *adv.* fiercely, 14/12, 35/34; fressely, 81/9.
 Frightnes, *sb.* fright, 16/15, 26.
 Fryst, *num.* first, 17/4, 31/33.
 Fyf, *num. adj.* five, 62/21; fywe, 63/21.
 Fylthed(e), *sb.* filthhead, filthiness, 64/6, 65/6.
 Fyne, *sb.* fine, 66/10.
- Galosis, *sb.* gallows, 35/16.
 Galyotz, *sb.* pirates ?, 22/32.
 Garnesynd, *pp.* garnished, fortified, 51/1. Fr. *garnir*.
 Gentil, *sb.* gentry, set, 101/17.
 Gentryce, *sb.* set, clan, 112/2.
- Gentrye, *sb.* gentry, 100/18.
 Gestes, *sb.* deeds, 120/10.
 Gettynges, *sb.* gettings, gain, plunder, 26/34.
 Girsliche, *adv.* terribly, 14/22 (? *adj.*).
 Good, *sb.* goods, 54/5.
 Grad, *vb.* cried out, 4/1.
 Greped, *vb.* griped, gripped, 126/26.
 Grewid, *vb.* grieved, pained, 109/9; grewid, *pp.* 39/25.
 Grymly, *adj.* dreadful, terrible, 59/13.
 Gylte, *vb.* fault, 40/8.
 Gyued, *vb.* gyved, fettered, 60/10; gywid, 61/10.
- Half, *sb.* side; ethere h., either side, 8/19; euerich h., every side, 4/16; euche h., each side, 5/18; hys h., his side, 24/32; oon h., one side, 22/25; a south h., on the south side, 30/16; on his moþer half, on his mother's side, 8/15; halue, *pl.* 100/21.
 Halte, *vb.* held, 64/10; holte, hold, 64/11.
 Halowene, *sb.* saints, 122/1; halwene, 44/11.
 Hame, *pron.* them, 4/12.
 Hamlynge, *adj.* ambling, 89/21.
 Hand, *sb.* other h., second hand, 78/17.
 Har, *pron.* their, 9/17, 10/20, 74/31, 120/30; hare, 31/14; theirs, 32/15.
 Har, *adv.* ere, sooner.
 Hard, *pp.* heard, 29/32.
 Hardynes, *sb.* hardiness, boldness, 110/35.
 Haris, *pron.* theirs, 49/33; hars, 48/34.
 Hauteyne, *adj.* haughty, 76/16. O. Fr. *hautain*.
 Haw, *vb.* have, 34/7; hawydyn, had, 27/7.
 Haye, *sb.* hay, haw, churchyard, 68/32; 62/32.
 Hedid, *pp.* headed, beheaded, 151/8.
 Heed, *sb.* ? head, 78/33; heeddes, heads, princes ?, 34/28.
 Heere, *sb.* hair, hair-cloth, 42/5; here, 43/5.
 Hegh, *vb.* hight ('was callid'), 92/23.
 Hegheste, *adj.* highest ('host' 12/33), 13/33.
 Heghlygh, *adv.* highly, 90/25.
 Helf far, 16/14, *sb.* elves' doing.

- Helle, *vb.* helde, 2/24.
 Hellen, *vb.* conceal, hide, 78/1.
 Hent, *vb.* received, 10/35; henten, grasp, seize, 56/33, 80/26.
 Herbrowe, *vb.* harbour, seek shelter, 66/6.
 Here, *pron.* their, 18/29.
 Here, *adv.* here, 32/10.
 Herly, *adv.* early, 70/7.
 Herne, *sb.* nook, corner, 116/7.
 Herrer, *sb.* herre, lord, 116/30.
 Herth, *sb.* heart, 2/8, 22/28, 50/20.
 Herthly, *adj.* earthly, 66/4.
 Hertly, *adv.* heartily, courageously, 52/2; hertely, 53/2.
 Het, *vb.* was named, 2/3.
 Heudes, *sb.* heads, 14/17.
 Hey, *adj.* high, 57/29.
 Heye, *sb.* 70/27. See *Church-hey*.
 Heyth, *adj.* high, noble, 22/32.
 Hite, *pron.* it, 25/20.
 Hofstithes, *adv.* oftentimes, 16/14.
 Hold, *adj.* whole, faithful, 60/14; holde, whole, healthy, 59/24.
 Homward, *adv.* take h., go home, 86/3.
 Hoped, *vb.* looked to, trusted in, had confidence in, 70/22.
 Horynesse, *sb.* filthiness, 66/27. Comp. *horowe*, foul, used by Chaucer, pronounced *horry* in Devon. H.
 Host, *sb.* army, 16/10, 11, 104/26, 144/2.
 Host, *adj.*? hest, hext, highest, largest, 12/32.
 Hostyngis, *sb.* expeditions, armies, 17/14.
 Hungrod, *adj.* hungered, hungry, 116/8.
 Hurtyng, *sb.* hurting, hurt, 16/34.
 Hym, *pron.* him; hym þriddesom, comp. Gr. *αὐτὸς τρίτος*, 14/1, 32/20.
 Hyrynge, *adj.* hireling, waged, 22/31.
 Iappynge, *sb.* japing, jesting, 54/26; Iappynge, 55/27.
 I-bansheth, *pp.* banished, 24/1; y-banshet, 25/1.
 I-bydde, *pp.* abided, stayd, 62/8.
 I-corne, *pp.* chosen, 22/18.
 I-deleth, *pp.* dealt, divided, 66/19.
 I-destrued, *pp.* destroyed, 84/32.
 I-dobbed, *pp.* dubbed, 94/13.
 I-drow, *pp.* thrown, d = th, 18/1.
 I-dyght, *pp.* prepared, 58/19.
 I-endeth, *pp.* ended, 22/16.
 I-flow, *pp.* fled, 46/27.
 I-fulled, *pp.* baptized, 64/33; yfullid; 65/33.
 I-garnset, *pp.* garnished, fortified, 50/1.
 I-hard, *pp.* heard, 28/32.
 I-heded, *pp.* beheaded, 150/7.
 I-helled, *pp.* iheled, covered, 10/21.
 I-herberged, *pp.* filled, stowed, 108/34; I-herbergide, 109/34.
 I-herberowide, *pp.* harboured, sheltered, 63/31; I-horberowed, 62/31.
 I-hodet, *pp.* hooded, 132/28.
 I-hokred, *pp.* insulted, 140/16.
 I-horied, *pp.* defiled, 138/32.
 I-hosted, *pp.* hosted, quartered, 16/9.
 I-lacet, *pp.* laced, 10/17.
 Illy, *adv.* in an ill way, 78/7.
 Ilyche, *adv.* alike, 66/19.
 I-meygnet, *pp.* mingled, 102/27.
 Inamliche, *adv.* namely, especially, 16/28.
 In-leyde, *pp.* laid in, 37/21.
 I-primseined, *pp.* catechized, 64/32, 65/32.
 I-quenytet, *pp.* pleased, 36/35.
 I-rettet, *pp.* charged with, 68/26.
 I-roted, *pp.* rooted, 20/27, 112/3, 148/18.
 I-sacred, *pp.* sacred, consecrated, 132/28.
 I-scomfyte, *pp.* discomfited, 116/20.
 I-shent, *pp.* ruined, 68/28, 38/16.
 I-shwerne, *pp.* sworn, 24/26.
 I-slawe, *pp.* slain, 80/13.
 I-stablet, *pp.* established, 64/27.
 I-storbet, *pp.* disturbed, 124/34.
 I-suywed, *pp.* issued, shot, 116/9.
 I-swewed, *pp.* showed, 64/12.
 I-told, *pp.* reckoned, 2/4.
 I-wepned, *pp.* armed, 80/11.
 I-worth, *pp.* become, 102/6, 148/14.
 I-wyted, *pp.* blamed, 8/13.
 Kappe, *sb.* 46/17; lappe, R. 47/17.
 Karue, *vb.* k. of, cut off, 14/23.
 Kene, *adj.* keen, fierce, sharp, 112/33.
 Kepyngge, *sb.* keeping, watch, guard, 53/10; kypyngge, 52/9.

- Kernel**, *sb.* battlement, 10/28.
Knyghten, *sb.* knights', 92/15.
Kynde, *sb.* kind, nature; of k., by nature, naturally, 18/27; Through k. of Troy, Through our Trojan origin, 22/26.
Kynde, *adj.* natural, own, 6/27.
Kyndly, *adj.* kindly, natural, 76/16.
Kyndly, *adv.* kindly, naturally, by birth, 22/28; kyndlych, 22/24.
Kynly, *adv.* by kin, by birth, 23/24. See *Kyndly*.
Laked, *vb.* enjoyd, 132/29; lakyd, 133/29.
Large, *adj.* bounteous, generous, 25/2; largh, 24/1.
Laser, *sb.* lazar, leper, 44/13.
Lastes, *sb.* faults, deceits, 102/21.
Latest, *adj.* last in place, 52/1.
Lede, *adj.* folk, 4/24; leed, 64/18.
Lef, *adj.* dear, 108/8; lefe, 111/34.
Lered, *adj.* learned, 42/2; lerid, 43/2.
Leth, *vb.* let, hindered, 52/7; leth, allowed, cauld, 64/5.
Lette, *sb.* let, hindrance, 94/5.
Leue, *adj.* dear, 108/6.
Leue, *vb.* leave, omit, 108/10.
Leuet, *vb.* loved, 118/35.
Lewed, *adj.* lewd, uneducated, vulgar, 42/2; lewid, 43/2.
Lewidly, *adv.* lewdly, wickedly, 47/30.
Leyden, *vb.* leyden on, laid on, attacked, 96/2; leydyn, 97/2.
Lif, *adj.* lief, pleasing, 8/22.
Lodderly, *adv.* wickedly, 22/33.
Lodesmane, *sb.* pilot, leader, 22/21; 36/28.
Loge, *sb.* lodge, wattled hut, 10/3.
Loghe, *adj.* low, short, 88/10.
Loly, *adj.* grim, terrible, 40/8, 58/12.
Lolych, *adj.* lovely, affable, 103/18; lounelyche, 102/18.
Lome, *adv.* often, frequently, 44/36.
Lost, *sb.* loss, 112/23; loste, 146/12; lostes, 8/2; lostis, 97/24; Lostys, 9/2.
Loth, *adj.* hateful, unpleasant, 14/6, 30/19.
Lotles, *adj.* buxom, obedient, 114/4.
Lout, *vb.* l. ham, lout themselves, do obeisance, 44/26.
Lowe, *sb.* love, 131/14.
Lych, *sb.* like, body, 88/26; lyche, 89.
Lyddere, *adj.* lither, bad, wicked, 44/6, 68/7; lyder, 32/14.
Lyddyryly, *adv.* litherly, wickedly, 46/30.
Lyddernysse, *sb.* litherness, wickedness, 76/29.
Lygne, *adj.* gentle?, 102/17.
Lyket, *vb.* was liked, pleasd, 34/14.
Lyme, *sb.* limit, bond?, 62/18.
Lyue, *sb.* life, 82/32.
Manequelleres, *sb.* mankillers, 125/16.
Maner, *sb.* manner; many m. metes, many kind of meats, 62/28; manners, politeness, 22/10.
Mane-shipe, *sb.* manship, courtesy, 4/33; manshype, 70/12.
Manly, *adv.* in a manly way, 24/6.
Manred, *sb.* homage, 56/20.
Man-shyply, *adv.* worshipfully, reverently, 66/22.
Manslaghtres, *sb.* manslaughterers, 124/16.
Mansynge, *sb.* cursing, excommunication, 120/17.
Marche, *sb.* march, border, 72/18; 146/31.
Mayny, *sb.* 115/22. See *Meignè*.
Me, *pron.* men (comp. German *man*), one, they, 16/5, 24/14, 32/27, 42/10, 70/33.
Meet-yeuer, *sb.* meat-giver, 54/25; met-yeuer, 112/36. Comp. *metegavel*.
Meignè, *sb.* household troops, 22/18; menny, 79/28; mennye, 79/13; meny, 115/10; meygnees, 66/5; meyne, 26/8; meynne, 39/5; meyngne, 27/9. O. Fr. *meignee*, *meyne*.
Mekely, *adv.* humbly, kindly, 48/2.
Membres, *sb.* manly m., manly members, privy parts, 44/18.
Merres, *sb.* meres, boundaries, 38/17.
Meste, *adv.* most, 42/7.
Mesury, *sb.* misery, 43/15.
Meteful, *adj.* moderate, 113/24. See *Methesfull*.
Methe, *sb.* moderation, 98/12.
Methesfull, *adj.* moderate, 112/24.
Methelyche, *adj.* moderate, 70/18;

- methlych, 98/28; metlych, 76/15; metlyche, 98/10; middle-sized.
- Mich**, *adj.* much, large, 34/27; mich yuell, much or great evil, leprosy, 32/7.
- Modelyng**, *sb.* meddling, 56/18.
- Mone**, *sb.* moan, complaint, 28/23.
- Morowenyng**, *sb.* morning, 82/21.
- Most**, *vb.* must, could, 40/22.
- Mostdele**, *adv.* mostdeal, mostly, 16/1.
- Mostwhat**, *adv.* mostly, for the most part, 88/17.
- Mother-church**, *sb.* cathedral, 86/29.
- Motyng**, *sb.* mooring, pleading, disputing, 144/29.
- Mych**, *adj.* large, 56/29, 74/1; myche, 74/2.
- Myght & mayn**, might & main, 116/15.
- Mynyed**, *vb.* reminded, warned, 74/29, 84/25.
- Mys-byfelle**, *vb.* misbefell, fell amiss, 124/15; mys-be-felle, 125/16.
- Mysdone**, *vb.* misdo, 101/32.
- Myse-lyckenys**, *sb.* mislikeness, strange shape (a wolf-woman), 131/25.
- Myssayse**, *sb.* misease, 40/5. O. Fr. *mesaise*.
- Myssayse**, *adj.* miseased, 114/23; myssaysid, 115/22.
- Na**, *adv.* not, 112/2.
- Name**, *sb.* name, 6/33.
- Name**, *vb.* took, 6/12; name, 2/22, 23; n. an hand, 72/24; namen, 80/4; n. sekernesse, took surety, 74/8.
- Namely**, *adv.* especially, 52/17, 66/4.
- Namy**, *vb.* name, 130/10.
- Narrow**, *adv.* narrowly, closely, 40/21; narowe, 4/19; narrow, 41/22, 97/10.
- Naroweis**, narrow ways, 81/26.
- Nas**, *vb.* ne was, was not, 16/21, 26/21, 72/16, 114/8.
- Nat forthy**, *conj.* notwithstanding, nevertheless, 76/20, 77/22.
- Nathales**, *conj.* nevertheless, 78/10.
- Neb**, *sb.* (? nose), face, *vultus*, 98/11.
- Neght**, *adv.* nigh, nearly, 26/13.
- Nembre**, *sb.* number, 101/22; nenbre, 100/23.
- Ner**, *vb.* ne were, were not, 30/31, 100/8.
- Neue**, *sb.* nephew, 14/33. See *eme*.
- Neuer** (ne were), *vb.* should never be, 121/18; neuere, 120/18.
- Never no more**, 48/31.
- Neyght**, *adv.* nigh, near, 74/16.
- Nobelych**, noblych, *adv.* nobly, 35/29, 34/29.
- Noon-dayes**, *sb.* noonday, 50/32.
- North**, by n., to the north of, 70/26.
- Nuy**, *sb.* noy, vexation, affliction, 90/7. Comp. *noxia*.
- Nyst**, ne wist, knew not, 4/29.
- Nythe**, *sb.* a nythe = at night, 72/33.
- O**, *num.* one, 106/12; oo, 89/26, 106/12.
- O**, *prep.* of, 108/34.
- Of**, *adv.* off, 12/11, 14/23, 32/4, 74/32.
- Oftere**, *adv.* oftener, 54/22.
- Oke**, *vb.* ached, pained, 108/9.
- Omest**, omyste, *adv.* overmost, uppermost, 106/1, 107/1.
- Ond**, *sb.* hatred, malice, 110/30; onde, 111/30.
- Onful**, *adj.* ondfull, malicious, 102/24; onfull, 103/24.
- Onper**, *prep.* under, 6/31.
- Opyn**, *adj.* open, uncovered, 42/22.
- Ordeynly**, *adv.* well o. = in good order, 46/12.
- Ortrow**, *sb.* overtrow, mistrust, suspicion, 128/14, 132/14; artrow, 133.
- Ost**, *adj.* burnt?, 50/2.
- Ostmen**, *sb.* hostmen, soldiers, 82/23.
- Ostyng**, *sb.* hosting, expedition, 16/14; see *Hostyngis*.
- Oper**, *conj.* other, or, 24/6.
- Other**, *adj.* second, 50/29, 76/12, 88/8.
- Ouerd[r]ede**, *vb.* ouerdrede, over-dreaded, 14/20.
- Ouergoste**, *vb.* goest beyond, 38/17.
- Ouer-hand**, *sb.* upperhand, superiority, 34/6, 50/11, 106/3, 118/23.
- Ouersaille**, *vb.* sail over, upset?, 16/12.
- Ouerthrowen**, *vb. pass.* be prostrated, 62/21.
- Ouer-truste**, *sb.* overboldness, presumption, 22/10. Comp. *Overhope*.
- Oure**, *pron.* ours, 24/7, 96/15.
- Out-chese**, *vb.* choose out, 34/8.
- Out-commyn**, *adj.* come from foreign parts, 12/29; out-comen, 18/5.
- Out-tak**, *pp.* outtaken, except, 122/8.

- Own**, *adj.* = own house, tent, 62/31.
Owre, *prep.* over, 130/2.
Ows, *pron.* us, 22/3, 30.
Paas, *sb.* pass, 104/22; pas, 104/25; paace, 55/9.
Panetrye, *sb.* pantry, 62/27. Fr. *paneterie*.
Pany, *sb.* penny, 92/5.
Paralys, *adj.* paralysed folk, 44/14.
Parlement, *sb.* conference, 6/21; 18/11, 72/31. O. Fr. *parlement*.
Party, *sb.* part, side, 110/1.
Party arms, arms vertically divided, 10/4.
Pelfre, *sb.* pilfer, plunder, 52/8. O. Fr. *pelfrer*.
Pledynge, *sb.* suing, 112/20.
Plenary, *adv.* fully, openly, 31/27.
Pleneden, *vb.* sported, 74/18; pleydyn, 75.
Plente, *sb.* generosity, 102/31.
Plete, *sb.* plate, 46/10.
Poere, *sb.* power, O. Fr. 48/11.
Postes, *sb.* pillars, supports, 120/6.
Powere, *sb.* forces, 2/22, 4/17.
Prayes, *sb.* preys, booty, 80/1.
Prayes-takynge, *sb.* taking of booty, 78/27; pray-takynge, 118/11.
Praye, *vb.* prey, plunder, 80/3, 23; preedyn, plundered, 81/3.
Presons, *sb.* prisoners, 54/5, 15.
Primseine, *vb.* 'sign with the cross, make a catechumen,' 64/32.
Pruisant, *adj.* foreseeing?, 80/28.
Prout, prout, *adj.* proud, 22/5, 38/20.
Prow, *vb.* prove, 85/5.
Prutter, *adj.* prouder, 56/7.
Pullid, *vb.* plundered, robbed, 145/9.
Pullynge, *sb.* pilling, plundering, 112/21.
Purueynge, *adj.* provident, prudent, 98/21.
Pute, *sb.* pit, 36/18.
Pylfre, *sb.* pilfer, plunder, pillage, 80/4, 114/24. O. Fr. *pelfrer*.
Pynsynge, *sb.* affliction, 88/6.
Queller, *sb.* killer, 44/5.
Queme, *vb.* please, satisfy, 54/30, 98/15.
Quenyntyse, *quentyse*, *sb.* cunning, craft, 98/22, 99/22. O. Fr. *quointise*.
Quethene, *vb.* overcome R., 44/15.
Queynt, *adj.* cunning, sly, wily, 26/1, 98/21; quent, 27/1; queynth, 128/2.
Quyte, *adj.* quit, clear, free, 96/20.
Quyppen, *pp.* free, clean away, 80/27.
Raas, *sb.* race, rush, 16/12.
Radyr, *adv.* rather, more willingly, 7/13; earlier, before, 91/20.
Raght, *vb.* raght, recked, 32/9.
Ran, *vb.* r. to harme, 112/26.
Rascayll, *sb.* rascal, rabble, 50/21. O. Fr. *rascayle*.
Rathe, *adv.* soon, 24/29, 84/1; rather, sooner, 28/23, 68/14; before, 90/20, 130/4.
Rather, *adj.* earlier, previous, original, 86/4, 88/2.
Raunceoun, *sb.* ransom, 46/29.
Rebuked, *vb.* repulsed, checked, 34/34.
Recet, *sb.* refuge, harbour, 18/29, 30/28, 56/5; recette, 19/29, 31/28.
Recheste, *vb.* reckest, 108/9.
Rede, *sb.* counsel, 10/18, 68/33.
Remewid, *vb.* removed, 147/13.
Rere, *vb.* rear, raise, exalt, 46/2; rerid, took, captured, lifted, 107/30.
Rescewyd, *vb.* received, 123/27.
Reue, *vb.* rob, 114/3; rew, 115/3.
Reuer, *sb.* riever, robber, 112/21.
Reut, *sb.* ruth, pity, 8/1; reuth, 22/34, 54/18.
Reuthful, *adj.* ruthful, 32/23.
Reuynge, *sb.* rieving, plundering, 144/31; rewynge, 145/25; reyuynge, 145/32.
Rewe, *vb.* rue, regret, 146/1.
Robbed, *vb.* plundered, 80/23.
Rodes, *sb.* r. crucyfied, crucifixes, 122/1.
Roghly, *adv.* r. lokyng, rough looking, 88/9.
Row, *adv.* r. lokyng, rough looking, 89/9. A. S. *rāw*.
Ruthlyng, *sb.* rattling, 16/13.
Rycheshe, *sb.* riches, 96/24. Fr. *richesse*.
Rygge, *sb.* back, 58/2.
Ryght, *vb.* r. vp, raise up, 44/3; set up again, restore, 86/4.
Ryuely, *adv.* especially?, 128/12.

- Salletis, *sb.* sallets, light helmets, 11/24.
- Sam-crysp, *adj.* somewhat curled, 98/11; sam-roed, *adj.* somewhat ruddy, 54/27; same rede, 89/8; saun-rede, 88/8. A. S. *sam*, half.
- Saue, *vb.* saw, 49/6, 146/11.
- Sawe, *prep.* save, except, 18/21, 54/10.
- Sawe, *vb.* save, 73/6; sawit, saved, 4/23.
- Schavnge, *sb.* change, 51/6.
- Scomfited, *pp.* discomfited, 117/19.
- Screwid, *adj.* shrewd, cursed, bad, evil, 69/6.
- See way, seaway (comp. highway, roadway), 80/3.
- Seke, *adj.* sick, 66/13.
- Sekernesse, *sb.* security, 74/8; syke[r]-nesse, 50/7.
- Sekritissee, *sb.* securities, bonds, 6/22.
- Selcouth, *adj.* various, 28/33; wonderful, 44/11, 120/1, 126/13.
- Selth, *sb.* happiness, benefit, 50/8, 92/18; success, 98/23.
- Selue, *adj.* same, 100/18.
- Selyly, *adv.* happily, 42/32.
- Semblant, glad s., 98/12; sterne s., 98/27; fayr s., 102/18; semblant, 112/36; look, countenance.
- Senne, *sb.* synod, 120/15.
- Senthe, *adj.* seventh, 58/30; Senfte, 59/29.
- Seysyne, *sb.* seisin, possession, 82/12.
- Sheldrun, *sb.* shields, 31/29.
- Shendshype, *sb.* injury, harm, 114/3; shenshipp, 115/3.
- Sho, *pron.* she, 4/1.
- Shorthlych, *adv.* shortly, presently, 114/22.
- Shroue, *vb. int.* confessed, 130/23.
- Shyrth, *sb.* shirt, 42/5.
- Sill, *vb.* sell, 39/34. See *Syllene*.
- Sitè, *sb.* city, 32/17, 18.
- Sithe, *sb.* times, 26/6.
- Skyer, *sb.* squire, 8/32, 33.
- Slaght, *sb.* slaughter, 14/16, 20/28, 116/36, 138/32.
- Slaked, *vb.* slacked, failed, 48/24.
- Sleghtly, *adv.* slyly, 68/3.
- Sleghtes, *sb.* contrivances, 128/13.
- Sleghtlych, *adv.* craftily, 128/9; sleghtly, 144/17.
- Slouedyne, *vb.* slew, 39/8.
- Smert, *adj.* smart, sharp, rough; smert lond, rough wild land, 128/29.
- Smertly, *adv.* smartly, vigorously, 104/33; smyrtyly, 105/33.
- Smyth, *vb.* smite, 24/12; *pt.* smote, 106/35.
- Snel, *adj.* quick, active, 74/27.
- Snellych, *adv.* quickly, 82/3.
- Soine, *adv.* soon, 60/11.
- Soldrys, *sb.* shoulders, 89/11.
- Solempnelych, *adv.* solemnly, 90/25.
- Soth, *adj.* sooth, true, 54/1.
- Sortelych, *adv.* shortly, 93/14; Sortely, *adv.* shortly, 149/22.
- Sorynesse, *sb.* sorriness, soreness, sorrow, 110/1, 112/23.
- Spares, *sb.* battle-axe, 88/7; sparris, 17/12. See *Sparth*.
- Sparth, *sb.* battle-axe, 74/11, 26, 33; sparthes, 16/13.
- Spendynge, *sb.* spending, money, 78/27.
- Spourges, *sb.* spurge, thing to get rid of, scourge, 112/3. Comp. O. Fr. *espourger*.
- Spousbrych, *sb.* spousebreach, adultery, 102/23.
- Spousehede, *sb.* wedded state, 64/30.
- Sproty, *adj.* thin, small, 54/28. Comp. *Sprot*, sprout, splinter.
- Stabil, *vb.* establish, confirm, 69/29; stable, 68/30.
- Staluarthly, *adv.* stalwartly, sturdily, 116/1.
- Stalwardnesse, *sb.* stalwartness, strength, sturdiness, 52/2; stalwardthnesse, 54/20.
- Sted, *sb.* stead, place, state, 22/35; 'state,' 23/35.
- Stordy, *adj.* sturdy, 118/33; stordyer, 116/2.
- Storkes, *sb.* storks, 28/24.
- Strange, *adj.* strong, 54/8.
- Streynth, *vb.* strength, strengthen, 68/30.
- Streynth, *sb.* strength, force, meaning, 90/29, 96/14.
- Streyntnesse, *sb.* strongness, strength, 94/24; streyntnys, 95/24.
- Stronge, *adj.* strong, stormy, 66/33.

- Stronge**, *adv.* strongly, greatly, 4/3.
Styffly, *adv.* strivingly (?for 'styffly'), 26/29. See *Styfly*.
Styd, *sb.* stead, place, 42/5; stydde, 42/6; styddes, places, 50/11.
Styfly, *adv.* strongly, valiantly, 80/8, 104/31.
Stylly, *adv.* stilly, in secret, 46/19, 150/12.
Stynte, *vb.* stopped, 111/30; stynt, 112/30.
Suget, *adj.* subject, 24/21; subyect, 26/33; subyett, 26/21. O. Fr. *Suget*.
Surnesse, *sb.* sureness, security, 51/7.
Surte, *sb.* surety, 75/9. Fr. *Sûreté*.
Sybbe, *sb.* relation, 64/29.
Sybyllynges, *adv.* kinwise, with relatives, 102/23.
Sybrede, *sb.* relationship, 42/11.
Sydylynge, *adv.* sidling, obliquely, 94/19.
Sygge, *vb.* say, 54/18, 98/20.
Sykernesse, *sb.* security, 50/7. See *Sekernesse*.
Sykyrlychest, *adv.* most securely, 68/34.
Syllene, *vb.* sell, 38/32, 40/5.
Syller, *sb.* seller, 40/1.

Talent, *sb.* desire, wish, 6/25.
Tanked, *pp.* thanked, 14/19.
Tene, *sb.* tene, hatred, 4/12.
Tened, *pp.* grieved, vexed, 4/3.
Tethynges, *sb.* tithings, tithes, 66/1.
Thare, *conj.* there = where, 82/18.
Tharmes, *sb.* entrails, intestines, 88/4.
That, *adv.* ? read *thar*, 2/24, 65/5.
Thay, *dem.* those, 80/12, 14, 90/26, 116/3; they, the, 97/14.
Theghe, *conj.* though, 18/27, 32/9.
Ther, *conj.* where, 32/8, 57/30, 128/4; ther-to-for, *adv.* before, 63/29.
Thewes, *sb.* qualities, 16/28, 90/34.
Thewis, *sb.* thieves, 81/30.
Thedynges, *sb.* tiding, 10/7; thythyngis, 11/7, 35/31; thythynges, 6/15.
this, *adj.* these, 21/29.
Tho, *conj.* when, 4/9.
Tho, *prep.* to, 62/19.
Thought, *conj.* though, 15/31, 32/7.

Tholle, *vb.* thole, endure, suffer, 4/20; polled, 42/3, 118/24; tholleth, sufferd, 38/15; tholy, *infin.* 40/5.
Tholmode, *adj.* forbearing, 98/15.
Thondred, *sb.* thunder, 58/28.
þorwe, ?go through with it, 28/12.
Thre, *num.* a thre, in three parts, 66/20; at thre, 67/20; tre, 14/5.
Thretynges, *sb.* threatening, 60/9; trefynges, 70/9.
þriddesum, *adj.* third, 14/1; thrydsome, 32/20; thyrdesum, 15/2.
þurleth, *vb.* thirleth, pierce, 112/5.
Thus, from t. = from this, thence, 60/15.
Thwey, *num.* two, 12/35.
To, *adv.* too, 54/26, 82/3.
To, *art.* the, 10/27.
Toght, *vb.* thought, 16/25, 18/7.
To-hakked, *vb.* hacket to pieces, 82/2.
Toke, *vb.* reach (to the knee), 116/27.
Told, *vb.* reckoned, 60/8; Moch told by ham-self, thought much of themselves, 148/3; tolde, thought, 94/1, 96/25, 97/24.
Tollid, *pp.* sufferd, 39/15.
Ton, *sb.* town, 12/33; ton land, townland, division of parish, 124/2.
Toun londe, *sb.* townland, township, division of parish, 125/2.
Tre, *adj.* three, 14/5.
Trewege, *sb.* tribute, 114/29; truage, 60/15. O. Fr. *treuage*.
Trogh, *prep.* through, 22/6, 26/1, 62/18; troghe, 20/24; troght, 28/29.
Trukked, *vb.* trucked, was bartered, 48/9.
Trywly, *adv.* truly, 12/27.
Turnet to, *vb.* turn to, 78/32.
Turues, *sb.* turves, turfs, 80/17.
Twenty, *num.* twenty, 50/28.
Tynges, *sb.* things, 24/14; thing, 28/8; notynges, nothing, 16/5, 20/9.
Tynke, *vb.* think, 6/26; tynten, 22/4.
Tywesday, tywesdaye, tywysday, tywysday, *sb.* Tuesday, 98/1, 99/1, 2.

Vanhope, *sb.* wanhope, despair, 57/5.
Vend, *vb.* wend, 54/15.
Vepne, *sb.* weapon, 110/24.
Vickydly, *adv.* wickedly, 53/35.
Vncharged, *vb.* unloaded, 10/2.

- Vndedde, *vb.* undid, ruined, 114/4; vndid, 115/4. See *Vndo*.
- Vnderfonge, *vb.* receive, 62/19; vndrefyng, 4/32, 8/1; vndryfonge, received, 9/1.
- Vndo, *vb.* destroy, ruin, 20/6, 22/4, 84/11, 94/32.
- Vndrestondeth, *vb.* understand ye, *imper.* 20/15.
- Vneuenly, *adj.* uneven, unequal, inferior, 30/25.
- Vnhap, *sb.* mishap, 56/5.
- Vnhele, *sb.* misfortune, 126/12.
- Vnkedde, *adj.* strange, 20/20, 24/28; vnkyde, 31/6, 35/2.
- Vnkyndely, *adv.* unnaturally, 87/18.
- Vnmercyably, *adv.* unmercifully, mercilessly, 55/1. Comp. O. Fr. *merciabile*.
- Vnmesurable, *adv.* unmeasurably, beyond measure, 54/26; vnmeasurably, 55/26.
- Vnmetly, *adv.* unmeetly, immoderately, 118/33.
- Vnnommerabil, *adj.* innumerable, 19/15.
- Vnryght, *sb.* wrong, injustice, 86/18; vnryght, 112/32.
- Vnsikere, *adj.* unsure, 10/2.
- Vnsurnes, *sb.* unsureness, insecurity, 51/8.
- Vnwardly, *adj.* unwary, ignorant, 52/14.
- Vnwarly, *adv.* unwarily, unexpectedly, 78/9.
- Vnwemmed, *pp.* unstained, undefiled, 44/7, 92/4; vnwemyd, 93/3.
- Vpon, *prep.* from, against, 106/32.
- Vp-erid, *pp.* raised up, 13/2.
- Vptake, *vb.* succour, help, support, 92/3.
- Vreke, *vb.* wreak, avenge, 145/8.
- Vs-self, ourselves, 22/1.
- Vyrchip, *vb.* worship, 43/20.
- Vyrchipp, *sb.* worship, 5/32.
- Wanhope, *sb.* despair, 17/29, 32/12.
- Wanhoply, *adj.* desperate, 88/6.
- Warliere, *adv.* more warily, 12/19.
- Waryr, *adv.* more cautiously, 13/19.
- Warytres, *sb.* cursed trees, gallows, 34/16; 'galosis,' 35/16.
- Wax, *vb.* grew, turnd, became, 2/7; arose, grew up, 26/22.
- Wayte, *sb.* wait, expectation, 110/33.
- Weechene, *vb.* move, take, 36/31. A. S. *wecgan*: comp. weigh anchor.
- Wel, *adv.* well, quite, 52/13; frankly, 78/30; much, 78/32; very, 2/11.
- Wenttene, *vb.* think, say?, 106/8.
- Wenyng, *sb.* whining, mourning, 54/17.
- Wepne, *sb.* weapon, out of w. = out of harness, when not fighting, 54/31; wepyn, 55/31.
- Wepne, *vb.* weapon, arm, 50/27; weppen, 16/32; wepyn, 17/30.
- Wer, *vb.* war, 'wer the fight,' 10/27; were, 11/28; weren, *inf.* 82/16; werret, 3/6; werry, *inf.* 8/11; weryn, 83/16.
- Were, *sb.* war, 125/32.
- Weued, *sb.* altar, 42/26. A. S.
- Whan, *vb.* won, 136/11.
- Whan-hopefully, *adv.* unhopefully, despairingly, 16/30.
- What for, on account of, 108/21.
- Whodyreso, *adv.* whithersoever, 40/11.
- Whybelers, *sb.* quibblers?, 148/3.
- Whyle, *sb.* the w. = at that time?, 82/13; = *conj.* while, 82/15; That whylle = at that time, 124/20.
- Whyth, *prep.* with, 130/31.
- Wille, *adj.* wild, rough, 129/29.
- Wilych, *adv.* vilely, 54/1.
- Wndre, *prep.* under, 28/7.
- Wnneth, *conj.* unneth, scarcely, 88/15.
- Wnselth, *sb.* disadvantage, 50/8.
- Wo, *adj.* sorry, 4/35.
- Wode, *adv.* wildly, madly, 94/34.
- Wodere, *adj.* wilder, madder, 42/27.
- Woke, *adj.* weak, 146/10.
- Wolf, woman turned into a, 130.
- Wombe, *sb.* belly, 88/4.
- Wonder, *adj.* wonderful, 130/11.
- Wone, *sb.* custom, usage, 34/15.
- Wonet, *pp.* wont, accustomed, 38/33.
- Wonne, *sb.* custom, 66/29. See *Wone*.
- Wood, *adj.* mad, wild, 42/27.
- Worth, *vb.* happened, existed, was, 38/26; became, 124/33.
- Worthly, (worthy, R.) *vb.* honor, 92/3.
- Worthy, *vb.* honor, 93/2.

- Wrech, *sb.* wreak, vengeance, 120/34; wreche, 130/29.
 Wrechydnys, *sb.* vengeance, 131/33.
 Wrethe, *sb.* wrath, 74/22.
 Wreyer, *sb.* wraier, betrayer, 102/24.
 Wryttes, *sb.* writs, writings, letters, 56/13; yne wrytte, in writing, 64/7.
 Wryyng, *sb.* distorting, falsifying, 102/11.
 Wsyd, *pp.* used, accustomed, practist, skilful, 23/27.
 Wyage, *sb.* voyage, 62/7.
 Wylle, *sb.* at w. = as he wished, 58/22.
 Wynd abydyng, wind-bound, waiting for wind, 80/6.
 Wyrchipty, *adv.* worshiply, worshipfully, 67/22.
 Wyssed, *vb.* directed, guided, 94/19; wissede, 95/19.
 Wyt, *prep.* with, 50/15.
 Wytht, *prep.* with, 46/17.
 Wyttaulle, *sb.* victual, 104/6.
 Wyttyng, *sb.* witting, knowledge, 27/3.
 -y, *infn.*: See—assembly, castely, de-
 fouly, forswely, namy, tholy, werry, 8/11.
 Yardes, *sb.* boughs, sticks, 30/17.
 Yarne, *vb.* rushed, ran, 82/3.
 Y-cast, *pp.* purposed, 68/30.
 Y-douted hym, was afraid, 86/1.
 Y-dene, *pp.* done, 28/29.
 Y-dropesie, *sb.* dropsy, 44/14.
 Yern, *vb.* rush, hasten, 74/1, 76/2.
 Yernyng, *vb.* running, rushing, 94/34.
 Yew, *vb.* yeve, give, 55/32; yewyn, *pp.* 81/9.
 Y-lacet, *pp.* laced, 52/11.
 Y-leued, *pp.* believed, 102/10.
 Ymeuyd, *pp.* moved, 101/4.
 Yold, *sb.* yule, Christmas, 42/34; yolde, 43/34.
 Yolowe, *adj.* yellow, 98/10.
 Yorne, *adv.* gerne, eagerly, 92/21; yonre, 104/10.
 Yought, *sb.* youth, 68/20, 118/27.
 Youre, *adj.* yare, active, 114/27.
 Yoy, *sb.* joy, 100/29.
 Yroked, *pp.* rocked, 42/9.
 Y-rotid, *pp.* rooted, 149/17.
 Yuel, mich, much evil, leprosy, 32/7.
 Yurne, *sb.* eagerness, 112/1.

INDEX

(MAINLY)

BY THOMAS AUSTIN.

(For a completer Index, see Mr. Dimock's, *Gir. Camb. Op.* v. 440-60.)

- Adam of Yarnemouth (Yarmouth), sent with others to Ireland, 102.
- Adrian, Pope, grants privileges in Ireland to Henry II, 90; pledges to, 152.
- Albertus, Cardinal, sent into Normandy to enquire into Becket's death, 68.
- Aldelinesson, *see* Fitz-Audeline.
- Alexander, Lord of the world, 34/3.
- Alexander III, Pope, 44; grants Ireland to Henry II by Bull, 90.
- Amlyffy (? Queenstown), a harbour of Dublin, John the Mad lands there, 46.
- Angoy (Anjou), Henry II Earl of, 6.
- Ardfynan (Archphinan), castle built at, 148/22.
- Armagh, Council of Irish Clergy held there, 38; Archbishop too old to attend Synod of Cashel, 66.
- Arms, the Irish to be forbidden, 152.
- Arthur, kings of Ireland paid him tribute, 136/13.
- Banow, Fitz-stephen lands there, 10.
- Barry, Philip de (brother of Giraldus Cambrensis), comes to Ireland in 1183 to help Fitz-stephen, 126.
- Barry, Robert de, at siege of Wexford, 10; his bravery at Ossory, 14; his character, 16; his courage, 100; is nephew of Maurice and Robert Fitz-stephen, 100. (Was elder brother of Giraldus Cambrensis.)
- Barry, Robert de, son of above Robert, 100.
- Basile, or Basilia, sister of Earl Striguil, marries Raymond Fitz-gerald, 84; writes to her husband, 108.
- Bayonne, the Irish came from, 136.
- Becket, Archbishop of Canterbury, is murdered, 40-44.
- Beggering, Isle of, at mouth of Wexford harbour, is occupied by the Irish after burning Wexford, 54.
- Belyn, King of Britain, 136.
- Bernardson, Robert, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
- Berynger, William, sent with others to Ireland, 102.
- Bohun, Humfrey de, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
- Bowmen, sacrilegious, die suddenly, 62.
- Braken, St., prophecy of, 138.
- Breuse (Braose), Philip de, is left at Wexford by Henry II, 70; has land in Limerick granted him by the king, 122; is afraid of attacking Limerick, 124.
- Bride, St., his body found, 150.
- Bristow (Bristol), Macmorgh goes there, 6.
- Brittayne, Brytayne (Britany or Bretagne), story of a Breton ship, 12; Earl of Bretagne (Richard) rebels against his father Henry II, 78.
- Byldewdys (Buildwas), Rolf, Abbot of, attends Synod of Cashel, 64.

- Canterbury, Becket murdered there, 40.
- Cantetone, Reymond de, 100; slain, 148/25.
- Carrick (*Carraig*, a rock), near Wexford, Robert Fitz-stephen builds a castle there, 26; is besieged there, 48.
- Cashel, the Archbishop of, and Henry II, attend Synod there, 64; the Constitutions of Cashel, 64; Earl Striguil goes there, 82; account of the Synod sent to the Pope, 90; the Pass barricaded against the English, 104.
- Castles built in Ireland, 126, 128, 148.
- Chester, Earl of, 86; John, Constable of, 128/12.
- Clandechestre (? Gloucestershire), Henry II goes there, 56.
- Cogan, Miles de, commands at Dublin, 46; drives O'Rourke off from it, 58; returns to Ireland with Fitz-Audeline, 110; invades Connaught, 120; goes to England and returns, 122; has land in Cork given him, 122; at Limerick, 124; is slain at Lisamore, 124.
- Cogan, Richard de, brother of Miles, comes with a force into Ireland, 126.
- Columba, St., his prophecies, 116, 118, 138; his body found, 150.
- Comyn, John, Archbishop of Dublin, sent to Ireland to prepare the way for Prince John, 134/1.
- Connaught, Cathel, Archbishop of, is at Synod of Cashel, 64.
- Connaught, Roderick, King of, is an ally of O'Rourke, 4; yields to Henry II, 62; ravages Meath, 82; holds conference with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; his territory invaded by Miles de Cogan, 120; Roderick beaten by the English, 122.
- Constitutions of Cashel, 64.
- Cork, men of, defeated at sea by the English, 80; left in charge of Richard of London, 122; lands there divided among the English leaders, 122.
- Cormack, son of the King of Cork, rebels and is beheaded, 106.
- Courci, John de, sees Fitz-Audeline's rascality, and sends for troops to invade Ulster, 114; he takes Down, 114; Vivian tries to get rid of him, 114; besieged, 116; beaten at Firlee, but victorious elsewhere, 118; description of him, 118; is childless, 120; again made Ruler of Ireland, 146/15.
- Coutances, Henry II does penance there for Becket's death, 72.
- Cursed meat forbidden, 66.
- Davy, a Welshman, nephew of Raymond Fitz-gerald, swims the Shannon, 94.
- Dermot Maccarthy, King of Cork, does homage to Henry II, 60; fears to attack Raymond Fitz-gerald, 80; helped by Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; his son Cormack beheaded, 106; forced to make peace with the English, 122; leaves them, 124; slain, 148-150.
- Dermot Macmorgh, King of Leinster, seduces Rory's wife, Devorgilla, 2; his men refuse to help him, and he seeks foreign aid, 4; Henry II befriends him, 6; agrees to give his daughter, and Leinster to Striguil in return for help, 6; goes to Wales, 6; returns to Ireland and is joined by Robert Fitz-stephen, 8, 10; assaults Wexford, and captures it, 12; invades Ossory, and defeats the Prince, 14; many of his men desert him, 18; is urged to turn against the English, 20; harangues the men of Leinster, 20; O'Conor makes terms with him, 24; goes to attack Dublin, which submits, 26; aspires to be King of Ireland, 28; his daughter is married to Earl Striguil, 36; marches to Dublin, which is captured by him, 36; his son beheaded by O'Conor, King of Connaught, 38; his death, and burial at Ferns, 44; his character, 44.
- Desmond given to Miles de Cogan and Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, 122, 124.
- Deuelyn (Dublin), Laurence, Archbishop of, attends Synod at Cashel, 64; dies at Eu, 14 Nov., 1180, 132;

- John Comyn, Archbishop of, 132/24, 134/1.
- Deuelyn** (Dublin), Macmorgh marches there, and captures it, 26; taken by Raymond Fitz-gerald and Miles of Cogan, 36; Earl Striguil leaves a force there, 38; Hasculf attacks it, but is defeated, 46; the Irish besiege it, 48; are defeated there, 52; given up with other ports to Henry II by Striguil, 56; O'Rourke assaults it, 58; chief men left there by Henry II, to keep Ireland, 70; men of Dublin slaughtered by Donald O'Brien, 82; Trinity Church (Cathedral?), 110.
- Dosnild** (Donnell), King of Ossory, joins Raymond Fitz-gerald against O'Brien, 104; his address to the troops, 104.
- Down** taken by De Courcy, 114; he is besieged there, 116; relics at, 150.
- Dundonald**, Raymond le Gros builds a fort there, 30.
- Eclipses**, three in three years, 124.
- England**, the Silver Isle; Ireland, the Golden, 152.
- English**, a phantom army scares them, 16; Fitz-stephen addresses them, 22; the Irish enslave English children, 38; the English in Dublin defeat the Irish, 50; Irish Services to be in the English fashion, 66; the English in Ireland demand to be set under Reimund Fitz-gerald, 78; they invade Offaly, 78; rout a Cork fleet, 80; besieged in Limerick by O'Brien, 104; permitted to take food from the churches, 120; advance to Tuam, 122; defeat King Roderick, 122.
- Felmeth**, 128/26.
- Ferand**, William, shows bravery at Waterford, 32.
- Ferns**, Macmorgh winters there, 8; holds a strong position near it, 18; his death and burial there, 44.
- Firlee** (a territory on the river Bann, co. Antrim), de Courci defeated there, 118.
- Fitz-Audeline**, William de, sent to Ireland by Henry II, 110; envies and hates the Geraldines, 110; is self-indulgent and a plunderer, 112; robs Maurice Fitz-gerald's sons, 112; is a bad character, 112-114; is recald to England, 122.
- Fitz-gerald**, Alexander, son of Maurice, his bravery, 50.
- Fitz-gerald**, Davy, nephew of Raymond, 94.
- Fitz-gerald**, Gerald, son of Raymond, his bravery, 50.
- Fitz-gerald**, Maurice, half-brother to Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, helps Macmorgh, 8; has land granted him by Macmorgh, 12; arrives with forces at Wexford, 24; at Dublin, 48; harangues his men, 50; left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70; warns de Lacy of coming treachery, 74; description of him, 76; his courage, 100; his death, 112.
- Fitz-gerald**, Nesta, daughter of Maurice, marries Hervey of Montmaurice, 92.
- Fitz-gerald**, Raymond (Le Gros), son of Maurice Fitzgerald, and nephew of Sir Robert Fitz-stephen, sent to Ireland by Henry II, 30; repels the men of Waterford, 32; joins Earl Striguil, 34; joins in taking Waterford and Dublin, 36; sent by Henry II into Gascony, 40; is in Dublin, 48; his bravery at Dublin, 50; left as Viceroy in Ireland with Striguil, and invades Offaly, in command of the English troops, 78; marches towards Waterford, 80; goes to Wales, 82; lands at Wexford, and saves Striguil, 84; marches against O'Connor, 84; restores peace, 86; marches towards Limerick, 94; crosses the Shannon and takes Limerick, 96; description of him, 98; victuals Limerick, 100; marches there against O'Brien, 104; captures it, 106; marches to Cork, and beats Cormack, 106; has a letter from his wife, 108; commits Limerick to O'Brien, 108; surrenders his government to Henry, 110; is childless, 120; sails to Cork, and helps to put down the rebellion, 126.

- Fitz-gerald, William**, father of Raymond, dies, 82.
- Fitz-gerald, William**, eldest son of Maurice, marries Helen Fitz-gilbert, 92.
- Fitz-henry, Meiler**, his bravery, 14, 100; leads the attack on Limerick, 106; gets Kildare, 128.
- Fitz-henry, Robert**, brother of Meiler, 100.
- Fitz-hugh, Raymond**, 100, slain, 148.
- Fitz-stephen, Sir Robert**, Constable of South Wales, is set free by Rys, the Prince, 8; collects troops to help Macmorgh, 8; lands at Banow, and marches to Wexford with him, 10; stands firm to Macmorgh, 18; urged to retire from Ferns, 20; harangues the English, 22; helps to defeat O'Conor, 26; advises Macmorgh to get more English help, 28; is besieged in Carrick Castle, 48; his defence, 52; deceived into a surrender, 52; described, 54; imprisoned by Henry II, but pardoned after, 60; left by Henry II as a leader in Ireland, 70; his courage, 100; (? same) goes into Ireland with Fitz-Audeline, 110; and is robbed of lands by him, 112; is childless, 120; attacked by the Irish, 126; his right to come to Ireland, 134.
- Fitz-stephen, Maurice**, 30.
- Fitz-stephen, Meredus**, son of Sir Robert, dies at Cork, 124.
- Fitz-stephen, Raymond**, loses some of his lands, 112.
- Fitz-stephen, Rolf**, son of Robert, 120.
- Forthred, Fothred, Fothurtu**, now Forth, in Carlow, 128/24.
- Frederick**, Emperor of Germany, 44.
- French warfare** contrasted with Irish and Welsh, 151.
- Fresel**, Keeper of Waterford, is slain by his guides, 84.
- Geoffrey**, Earl of Bretagne, son of Henry II, rebels, 76; is overcome, 86; dies, 132.
- Gerald de Barri** (Giraldus Cambrensis), 62, 78; comes to Ireland, 126; his advice on the conquest and government of Ireland, 150-2. His brothers: *see* Barry.
- Geraldines**, the, envied, 110; praised, 113.
- Germon, Gurguntius**, 136/10.
- Glanvyl, Ralph de**, defeats Henry II's sons, 86.
- Glyndelagh** (Glendalough) hills, 36.
- Golden Isle**, Ireland, 152.
- Goshawk**, story of Henry II's, 56.
- Gothred**, King of Man, has letters from Striguil, 48.
- Griffin, Robert**, nephew of Maurice Fitz-gerald, has a dream, 73; saves de Laci from Rory's treachery, 74; slays Rory, 76; gets a castle, 128/24.
- Gundeville, Hugh de**, left as a leader in Ireland by Henry II, 70.
- Gurguntius**, Belyn's son, 136/10.
- Gylmory, K.**, at Arthur's feast at Karlyon, 136/14.
- Hasculf**, chief man in Dublin, escapes from it, 36; goes with forty Norse ships to attack it, and is captured, 46; is beheaded, 48.
- Haverford**, 72.
- Helen**, sister of Earl Striguil, given to William, son of Maurice Fitz-gerald, 92.
- Henry II** of England, 2; Macmorgh seeks help from him, 4; appeals to his subjects to aid Macmorgh, 6; forbids trade with Ireland, 40; his Irish edict, 48; lands at Waterford, 58; imprisons Fitz-stephen, 60; the Kings of Cork and Limerick do him homage, 60; the Kings of Connaught and Meath also yield to him, 62; feast given by him, 62; assembles Clergy at Cashel, and has Constitutions made, 64; his Irish affairs, 68; leaves Ireland, 70; despises the speaking stone of Lechlavar, 72; goes to Haverford, and Normandy, and does penance for Becket's death at Coutances, 72; makes peace with the French king, 72; his sons rebel, 76; collects troops at Rouen, 78; leaves Ireland to viceroys, 78; overcomes his sons, 86; Merlin's prophecy about his sons, 88; description of him, 88; gets a grant of the Lordship of Ireland from the

- Pope, 90; recalls Raymond Fitz-gerald, 102; his Irish Commissioners return, 110.
- Henry, son of Henry II, rebels against his father, 68, 76; overcome, 86; dies, 132.
- Hervey of Mountmaurice has land granted him, 12; wishes prisoners to be butchered (they're drown'd), 34; at Waterford, 56; succeeds Raymond Fitz-gerald as Constable, 82; is jealous of him, 92; marries Nesta Fitz-gerald, 92; sends lies about Raymond Fitz-gerald to Henry II, 102; his description, 102; childless, 120; turns monk, 126.
- Irish Church, spoild by John, 146.
- Irish folk, 52, 78, 82, 90, 110; Northerners true, Southerners false, 126; are false, 136, 142; plunder, 144; conspire, 150; tribute to be taken from, 152.
- Jeroboam, 142/18.
- John of Salisbury purchases privileges in Ireland for Henry II from Pope Adrian, 92; goes to Ireland, 130.
- John the Herford, 128/26.
- John the Wood (mad) leads forty Norse ships against Dublin, and is slain, 46.
- John, Constable of Chester, goes to Ireland, 128.
- John, Prince, son of Henry II, sent to Ireland, A.D. 1185, 134; his failure there, and its causes, 136-149; bad state of Ireland under him, 144; new edition of the *Expugnacio* sent him, 152.
- Julius Caesar, 34/3.
- Kenalayne, men of, 150/2.
- Kildare, Bishop of, helps to deceive the English, 52.
- Kildare, given to Meyler, but changed for Leix, 128/27.
- Kyldalo (Killaloe), 106.
- Kylka, 128/25.
- Lateran Council (March 1179), 124.
- Lacy, Hugh de, goes with William son of Aldeline as messenger to the Kings of Connaught and Meath, 62; left in Ireland as a leader by Henry II, 70; meets O'Rourke, 72; treacherously attacked by him, 74; returns to Ireland as Seneschal, 122; fortifies Leinster and Meath, 128; is suspected of aiming at Kingdom, 128; goes to England and returns, 130; is recald from Ireland, 134; is slain A.D. 1186, 150.
- Llandaff, Ralph, Archdeacon of, attends Synod of Cashel, 64.
- Lechlarar, Stone of, speaks, 70.
- Leix, changed for Kildare, 128/29.
- Leycestre (Leicester), Earl of, captured by Henry II, 86.
- Leinster, governed by Macmorgh, 2; Rory and the King of Connaught invade it, 4; Macmorgh harangues the men of Leinster, 20; had few castles, 128/23; some built, 128.
- Limerick, O'Brien, King of, is warred on by the King of Connaught, 26; Limerick left in charge of Miles of St. David's, 100; burnt by O'Brien, 110; Sir Robert Fitz-stephen and others go there, but retreat, 122.
- Lismore, Henry II goes there, 60; Christian, Bishop of, and Papal Legate, presides at Synod of Cashel, 64; Lismore attacked by the English, 80; Miles de Cogan goes there, 124; a castle built there, 148/22 (ruins still in being.—D.).
- London, Richard of, Governor of Cork A.D. 1177, 122/28.
- Louis, King of France, 44.
- Maccarthy, *see* Dermot Maccarthy.
- Mac Donlevy, King of Ulster, flees from de Courcy, 114; besieges de Courcy in Down, 116; is defeated, 116.
- Macdonough, Prince of Ossory, is defeated by Macmorgh, and sues for peace, 14.
- Macmorgh, *see* Dermot Macmorgh.
- Macmorgh, Eve, daughter of Dermot, marries Earl Striguil, 36.
- Macsaghlin of Olan, is taken prisoner at Waterford, 37.

- Mac-Tire** slays Miles de Cogan, 124.
- Man, Isle of**, governed by King Gothred, 48.
- Marseilles**, 132/7.
- Masturel**, William, joins Henry II, 68.
- Meath**, Rory king there, 2; ravaged by Earl Striguil, 38, by O'Connor, 84; yielded to Henry II, 62; wolf-woman in, 130; is well castled, 128/23, 130/9.
- Merlin**, prophecies of, 10, 34, 44, 58, 62, 70, 88.
- Meyler**, son of Raymond Fitz-gerald's cousin is at Wexford, 84; swims the Shannon, 94; description of him, 98; castle built for, 130/7.
- Miles of St. David's**, cousin of Raymond Fitz-gerald, left in charge of Limerick, 100.
- Milford Haven**, Wales, 124/15.
- Moling, St.**, prophecies of, 34, 58, 62, 138.
- Mountmaurice**, *see* Hervey.
- Myles of Cogan** helps in taking Dublin, 36; goes to Lismore, and is slain there, 124. *See* Cogan.
- Myght (Meath)** destroyed by O'Connor, 84.
- Newenham (Newnham)**, in Clanchestrestre, 56.
- Newry**, de Courci conquers at Ivor's Bridge near, 118.
- Nicol**, a priest, attends Synod of Cashel, 64; ? Prior of Wallingford, conveys Alexander's Bull into Ireland, 90.
- Normans**, John's young, pull the beards of the Irish chiefs, 140; are John's worst advisers, 142, 146.
- Norsemen** attack Dublin, 46.
- Not, William**, his bravery, 52.
- Oboy**, castle built in, 130/8.
- O'Brien, Donald**, King of Limerick and Thomond is warred against by the King of Connaught, and defeats him, 26; does homage to Henry II, 60; slaughters the men of Dublin, 82; rebels against Henry, 92; besieges Limerick, 104; holds conference with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 106; burns Limerick, 110.
- O'Connor, Roderic**, King of Connaught and Ireland, tries to raise the country against Macmorgh and the English, 18; addresses his followers, 20; comes to terms, 24; makes war on the King of Iáimerick, and is defeated, 26; beheads Macmorgh's son, 38; ravages Meath, 84.
- Odrone (Odruon**, a territory in co. Carlow, 52), Striguil defeats a Leinster force in a pass near, 54.
- Ofolanes (Offaly**, in north of the present co. Kildare), Leinster, is invaded by the English, 78.
- Okenseley**, Macmurgh there, 18; Macmurgh of Okensely joins Raymond Fitz-gerald, 104.
- Olethan**, 148/25.
- Omurthy**, 128/25.
- Onolan**, 128/24.
- O'Phelan (Olan)**, 30, 37.
- Ophelayn**, 112.
- O'Rourke**, *see* Rory.
- Osbern (Osborne)** of Hereford, sent into Ireland, 102.
- Ossory (Kilkenny, etc.**, in Leinster) invaded by Macmorgh, 14, 62.
- Paris**, 133/8.
- Parliament (Conference)** at Rorik's Hill, 74.
- Patrick, St.**, prophecy of, 138; his body found, 150.
- Pec, Richard de**, 128/19.
- Pembroke**, Henry II sails thence, 56.
- Phantom army** terrifies the English, 16.
- Philip of Worcester**, 134.
- Poitou**, Earl of, Richard, son of Henry II, rebels with his brothers, 78.
- Pope**: his right to all islands, 136; grants Ireland to Henry II, 136.
- Rathwyldes Tower**, 36.
- Rauf**, son-in-law of Miles de Cogan, slain at Lismore, 124.
- Raymond Fitzhugh (hues-son)**, 100.
- Raymond le Gras**, *see* Fitz-gerald, Raymond.

- Redlesford, Walter de, kills John the Wood, 46; castle built to him, 128/25.
- Rehoboam: Prince John foolishly imitates him, 142.
- Richard, Earl of Poitou, son of Henry II, rebels against his father, 78; is overcome, 86.
- Richard of London is in charge of Cork, 122.
- Richard of the pek (Peak) reaches Ireland, 128/19.
- Robert de Bygaz, 130/8.
- Robert de Po(w)er, Constable of Waterford, comes to Ireland, 122.
- Roger le Poer slain, 150.
- Rolf, son of Robert Fitz-stephen, 76.
- Rorik's Hill, Conference held there with Rory, 74.
- Rory (O'Rourke), King of Meath, left by his wife, 2; marches into Leinster to avenge his shame, 4; assaults Dublin, 58; yields to Henry II, 62; has a conference with de Lacy, 72; treacherously attacks him, 74; is slain by Maurice Fitz-gerald, 76.
- Rys, son of Griffin, Prince of Wales, sets Fitz-stephen free, 8.
- Salisbury, John of, 92, 130.
- Scotland, King of, taken by Henry II, 86; a Papal Legate goes to Scotland, 114.
- Shestre (Chester), Earl of, captured by Henry II, 86.
- Shynen (Shannon), borders Meath, 82; the river swum, 94; King of Connaught there, 106.
- St. James, 72.
- Stevenson, *see* Fitz-stephen.
- Striguil, Richard, Fitz-gilbert, Earl of, agrees to aid Macmorgh, and has Leinster given him, 6; receives letters from him, 28; sends Raymond le Gras to Ireland, 30; lands at Waterford, and assaults the town, 34; captures it, and marries Macmorgh's daughter, 36; leaves a force in Dublin, 38; his description, 54; sails to England, and yields Dublin and other ports to Henry II, 56; waits at Pembroke for favourable wind, 56; left as Viceroy in Ireland with Raymond Fitz-gerald, 78; asks help of him, and promises him his sister Basile, 84; saved by him, 84; his death, 108; burial, 110; his right to come to Ireland, 134.
- Sur, parts Leinster and Munster, 30; King of Limerick comes there, 60; Raymond there, 84.
- Tachmeho, 130/7.
- Theodinus, Cardinal, comes to Normandy, to Henry II, 68.
- Troy, English sprung from, 22.
- Tuam, in Galway, occupied by the English, 122.
- Tybraghnych, Tibraghny in S.W. Kilkenny, 60.
- Tyllagh, 128/26.
- Ulster invaded by de Courci, 114.
- Velletri, Archbishop Comyn consecrated at, A.D. 1182, 132.
- Vivian, a Papal Legate, comes to Down, 114; holds a Synod at Dublin, 120.
- Vryel, in Ulster (the present counties of Louth, Armagh, and Monahan), 114; de Courci defeated there, 118.
- Wales, 6, 8.
- Wallingford, Nichol, Prior of, conveys Papal Bull to Ireland, 90.
- Walter, Theobald, 150/1.
- Waterford, Raymond le Gras lands near it, 30; capture by him of seventy of its inhabitants, 32; and butchery of them, 34; Earl Striguil lands there, 34; assault of it by him, and capture of it, 34, 36; the Irish slay the English there, 84; Council of Irish clergy gathered there, 90; its walls, 116.
- Weysford (Wexford) men threaten to kill Fitz-stephen, 54; Henry II sails thence to England, 70; Raymond lands there, 84.
- Weysford (Wexford), Bishop of, deceives the English, 52.
- Wicklow, Castle, 112; Wykynlo, 92.
- Worcester, Philip of, takes Hugh de Laci's post, and is cursed by the Irish, 134.





PR Early English Text
1119 Society
A2 [Publications]
no.107 Original series

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH

